THE

ADVENTURES

OF

Peregrine Pickle.

In which are included,

MEMOIRS

OF A

LADY OF QUALITY.

In FOUR VOLUMES.

VOL. III.

Reſpicere exemplar vitæ morumque jubebo
Doctum imitatorem, & veras hinc ducere voces.
HOR.

LONDON:
Printed for the AUTHOR:
And ſold by D. WILSON, at Plato's Head, near Round-Court, in the Strand.
MDCCLI.

MVSEVM
BRITAN
NICVM

THE CONTENTS OF THE THIRD VOLUME.

CHAP. LXXIX.

PEregrine *arrives at the gariſon, where he receives the laſt admonitions of Commodore* Trunnion, *who next day reſigns his breath, and is buried according to his own directions. Some gentlemen in the country make a fruitleſs attempt to accommodate matters betwixt Mr.* Gamaliel Pickle *and his eldeſt ſon.* p. 1

CHAP. LXXX.

The young gentleman having ſettled his domeſtic affairs, arrives in London, *and ſets up a gay equipage. He meets with* Emilia, *and is introduced to her uncle.* p. 8

CHAP. LXXXI.

He proſecutes his deſign upon Emilia *with great art and perſeverance.* p. 15

CHAP. LXXXII.

He prevails upon Emilia *to accompany him to a maſquerade, makes a treacherous attempt upon her affection, and meets with a deſerved repulſe.* p. 21

CHAP. LXXXIII.

He endeavours to reconcile himſelf to his miſtreſs, and expoſtulates with the uncle, who forbids him the houſe. p. 30

CHAP. LXXXIV.

He projects a violent ſcheme, in conſequence of which he is involved in a moſt fatiguing adventure, which greatly tends towards the augmentation of his chagrin. p. 35

CHAP. LXXXV.

Peregrine *ſends a meſſage to Mrs.* Gauntlet, *who rejects his propoſal. He repairs to the gariſon.* p. 45

CHAP. LXXXVI.

He returns to London, *and meets with* Cadwallader, *who entertains him with a curious dialogue.* p. 51

CHAP. LXXXVII.

Crabtree *ſounds the ducheſs, and undeceives* Pickle, *who, by an extraordinary accident, becomes acquainted with another lady of quality.* p. 56

CHAP. LXXXVIII.

The memoirs of a lady of quality. p. 66

CHAP. LXXXIX.

Peregrine *amuſes his imagination, by ſlight incurſions upon the territory of vice and folly; reforms a back-ſliding brother, and ſends a celebrated ſharper into exile.* p. 238

CHAP.

CHAP. XC.

He perſuades Cadwallader *to aſſume the character of a magician, in which he acquires a great ſhare of reputation, by his reſponſes to three females of diſtinction, who ſeverally conſult the reſearches of his art.* p. 256

CHAP. XCI.

Peregrine *and his friend* Cadwallader *proceed in the exerciſe of the myſtery of fortune-telling, in the courſe of which they atchieve various adventures.* p. 266

CHAP. XCII.

The conjurer and his aſſociate execute a plan of vengeance againſt certain infidels who pretend to deſpiſe their art; and Peregrine *atchieves an adventure with a young nobleman.* p. 283

CHAP. XCIII.

Peregrine *is celebrated as a wit and patron, and proceeds to entertain himſelf at the expence of whom it did concern.* p. 293

THE

ERRATUM.

Page 74. line 27. *for* lord H. B. *read* lord S. B.

THE ADVENTURES OF Peregrine Pickle.

CHAP. LXXIX.

Peregrine *arrives at the garison, where he receives the last admonitions of Commodore* Trunnion, *who next day resigns his breath, and is buried according to his own directions. Some gentlemen in the country make a fruitless attempt to accommodate matters betwixt Mr.* Gamaliel Pickle *and his eldest son.*

ABOUT four o'clock in the morning our hero arrived at the garison, where he found his generous uncle in extremity, supported in bed, by Julia on one side, and lieutenant Hatchway on the other; while Mr. Jolter administered spiritual consolation to his soul, and

between whiles comforted Mrs. Trunnion, who, with her maid, ſat by the fire, weeping with great decorum; the phyſician having juſt taken his laſt fee, and retired, after pronouncing the fatal prognoſtic, in which he anxiouſly wiſhed he might not be miſtaken.

Though the commodore's ſpeech was interrupted by a violent hiccup, he ſtill retained the uſe of his ſenſes; and when Peregrine approached, ſtretched out his hand with manifeſt ſigns of ſatisfaction. The young gentleman, whoſe heart overflowed with gratitude and affection, could not behold ſuch a ſpectacle, unmoved. He endeavoured to conceal his tenderneſs, which in the wildneſs of his youth, and in the pride of his diſpoſition, he conſidered as a derogation from his manhood; but, in ſpite of all his endeavours, the tears guſhed from his eyes, while he kiſſed the old man's hand; and he was ſo utterly diſconcerted by his grief, that when he attempted to ſpeak, his tongue denied its office: ſo that the commodore, perceiving his diſorder, made a laſt effort of ſtrength, and conſoled him in theſe words: "Swab the ſpray from your bowſprit, my good lad, and coil up your ſpirits. You muſt not let the top-lifts of your heart give way, becauſe you ſee me ready to go down at theſe years; many a better man has foundered before he has made half my way; thof I truſt, by the mercy of God, I ſhall be ſure in port in a very few glaſſes, and faſt moored in a moſt bleſſed riding: for my good friend Jolter hath overhauled the journal of my ſins; and by the obſervation he hath taken of the ſtate of my ſoul, I hope I ſhall happily conclude my voyage, and be brought up in the latitude of heaven. Here has been a

doctor

doctor that wanted to ſtow me chock-full of phyſic; but, when a man's hour is come, what ſignifies his taking his departure with a 'pothecary's ſhop in his hold? Thoſe fellows come along ſide of dying men, like the meſſengers of the admiralty with ſailing orders: but, I told him as how I could ſlip my cable without his direction or aſſiſtance, and ſo he hauled off in dudgeon. This curſed hiccup (damnation ſeize it) makes ſuch a rippling in the current of my ſpeech, that mayhap you don't underſtand what I ſay. Now, while the ſucker of my wind pump will go, I would willingly mention a few things, which I hope you will ſet down in the log-book of your remembrance, when I am ſtiff, d'ye ſee. There's your aunt ſitting whimpering by the fire, I deſire you will keep her tight, warm, and eaſy in her old age; ſhe's an honeſt heart in her own way, and thof ſhe goes a little crank and humourſome, by being often over-ſtowed with Nantz and religion, ſhe has been a faithful ſhip-mate to me, and I dare ſay never turned in with another man, ſince we firſt embarked in the ſame bottom. Jack Hatchway, you know the trim of her as well as e'er a man in England, and I believe ſhe has a kindneſs for you; whereby, if you two will grapple in the way of matrimony, when I am gone, I do ſuppoſe, that my godſon, for love of me, will allow you to live in the gariſon all the days of your life."

Peregrine aſſured him, he would with pleaſure comply with any requeſt he ſhould make, in behalf of two perſons whom he eſteemed ſo much; and the lieutenant, with a waggiſh ſneer, which even the gravity of the ſituation could not prevent, thanked them both for their good will,

telling the commodore, he was obliged to him for his friendſhip, in ſeeking to promote him to the command of a veſſel which he himſelf had wore out in the ſervice: that notwithſtanding, he ſhould be content to take charge of her, tho' he could not help being ſhy of coming after ſuch an able navigator.

Trunnion, exhauſted as he was, ſmiled at this ſally, and after ſome pauſe, reſumed his admonitions in this manner: "I need not talk of Pipes, becauſe I know you will do for him, without my recommendation; the fellow has ſailed with me in many a hard gale, and I'll warrant him as ſtout a ſeaman as ever ſet face to the weather: but I hope you will take care of the reſt of my crew, and not diſrate them after I am dead, in favour of new followers. As for that young woman, Ned Gauntlet's daughter, I am informed as how ſhe is an excellent wench, and has a reſpect for you; whereby, if you run her on board in an unlawful way, I leave my curſe upon you, and truſt you will never proſper in the voyage of life: but, I believe you are more of an honeſt man, than to behave ſo much like a pirate. I beg of all love, you wool take care of your conſtitution, and beware of running foul of harlots, who are no better than ſo many mermaids, that ſit upon rocks in the ſea, and hang out a fair face for the deſtruction of paſſengers; thof I muſt ſay, for my own part, I never met with any of thoſe ſweet ſingers, and yet I have gone to ſea for the ſpace of thirty years. But, howſomever, ſteer your courſe clear of all ſuch brimſtone bitches; ſhun going to law as you would ſhun the devil, and look upon all attornies as devouring ſharks, or ravenous fiſh of prey. As ſoon

as

as the breath is out of my body, let minute guns be fired, till I am ſafe under ground: I would alſo be buried in the red jacket I had on, when I boarded and took the *Renummy*. Let my piſtols, cutlaſs, and pocket-compaſs be laid in the coffin along with me. Let me be carried to the grave by my own men, dreſſed in the black caps and white ſhirts which my barge's crew were wont to wear; and they muſt keep a good look-out, that none of your pilfering rapſcallions may come and heave me up again, for the lucre of what they can get, until my carcaſe is belayed by a tomb-ſtone. As for the motto, or what you call it, I leave that to you and Mr. Jolter, who are ſcholars; but I do deſire, that it may not be ingraved in the Greek or Latin lingos, and much leſs in the French, which I abominate, but in plain Engliſh, that when the angel comes to pipe *all hands* at the great day, he may know that I am a Britiſh man, and ſpeak to me in my mother tongue. And now I have no more to ſay, but God in heaven have mercy upon my ſoul, and ſend you all fair weather, whereſoever you are bound." So ſaying, he regarded every individual around him with a look of complacency, and cloſing his eye, compoſed himſelf to reſt, while the whole audience (Pipes himſelf not excepted) were melted with ſorrow; and Mrs. Trunnion conſented to quit the room, that ſhe might not be expoſed to the unſpeakable anguiſh of ſeeing him expire.

His laſt moments, however, were not ſo near as they imagined; he began to doſe, and enjoyed ſmall intervals of eaſe, till next day in the afternoon; during which remiſſions, he was heard to pour forth many pious ejaculations, expreſſing

his hope, that, for all the heavy cargo of his ſins, he ſhould be able to ſurmount the foothook-ſhrouds of deſpair, and get aloft to the croſs-trees of God's good favour. At laſt, his voice ſunk ſo low, as not to be diſtinguiſhed; and having lain about an hour, almoſt without any perceptible ſigns of life, he gave up the ghoſt, with a groan which anounced his deceaſe.

Julia was no ſooner certified of this melancholy event, than ſhe ran to her aunt's chamber, weeping aloud; and immediately a very decent concert was performed by the good widow and her attendants. Peregrine and Hatchway retired till the corpſe ſhould be laid out; and Pipes having ſurveyed the body, with a face of rueful attention, "Well fare thy ſoul! old Hawſer Trunnion, (ſaid he) man and boy I have known thee theſe five and thirty years, and ſure a truer heart never broke biſcuit. Many a hard gale haſt thou weathered; but now thy ſpells are all over, and thy hull fairly laid up. A better commander I'd never deſire to ſerve; and who knows but I may help to ſet up thy ſtanding rigging in another world?"

All the ſervants of the houſe were affected with the loſs of their old maſter, and the poor people in the neighbourhood aſſembled at the gate, and by repeated howlings expreſſed their ſorrow for the death of their charitable benefactor. Peregrine, though he felt every thing which love and gratitude could inſpire on this occaſion, was not ſo much overwhelmed with affliction, as to be incapable of taking the management of the family into his own hands. He gave directions about the funeral with great diſcretion, after having paid the compliments of condolance to his

his aunt, whom he conſoled with the aſſurance of his inviolable eſteem and affection. He ordered ſuits of mourning to be made for every perſon in the gariſon, and invited all the neighbouring gentlemen to the burial, not even excepting his father and brother Gam, who did not, however, honour the ceremony with their preſence; nor was his mother humane enough to viſit her ſiſter-in-law in her diſtreſs.

In the method of interment, the commodore's injunctions were obeyed to a tittle; and at the ſame time our hero made a donation of fifty pounds to the poor of the pariſh, as a benefaction which his uncle had forgot to bequeath.

Having performed theſe obſequies with the moſt pious punctuality, he examined the will, to which there was no addition ſince it had been firſt executed, adjuſted the payment of all the legacies, and being ſole executor, took an account of the eſtate to which he had ſucceeded, and which, after all deductions, amounted to thirty thouſand pounds. The poſſeſſion of ſuch a fortune, of which he was abſolute maſter, did not at all contribute to the humiliation of his ſpirit, but inſpired him with new ideas of grandeur and magnificence, and elevated his hope to the higheſt pinnacle of expectation.

His domeſtic affairs being ſettled, he was viſited by almoſt all the gentlemen of the county, who came to pay their compliments of congratulation, on his acceſſion to the eſtate; and ſome of them offered their good offices towards a reconciliation betwixt his father and him, induced by the general deteſtation which was entertained for his brother Gam, who was by this time looked upon by his neighbours as a prodigy of in-

inſolence and malice. Our young ſquire thanked them for their kind propoſal, which he accepted; and old Gamaliel, at their intreaties, ſeemed very well diſpoſed to an accommodation: but, as he would not venture to declare himſelf, before he had conſulted his wife, that favourable diſpoſition was rendered altogether ineffectual, by the inſtigations of that implacable woman; and our hero reſigned all expectation of being reunited to his father's houſe. His brother, as uſual, took all opportunities of injuring his character, by falſe aſperſions and ſtories miſrepreſented, in order to prejudice his reputation: nor was his ſiſter Julia ſuffered to enjoy her good fortune in peace. Had he undergone ſuch perſecution from an alien to his blood, the world would have heard of his revenge; but, notwithſtanding his indignation, he was too much tinctured by the prejudices of conſanguinity, to lift his arm in judgment againſt the ſon of his own parents; and this conſideration abridged the term of his reſidence at the gariſon, where he had propoſed to ſtay for ſome months.

CHAP. LXXX.

The young gentleman having ſettled his domeſtic affairs, arrives in London, *and ſets up a gay equipage. He meets with* Emilia, *and is introduced to her uncle.*

HIS aunt, at the earneſt ſolicitation of Julia and her huſband, took up her quarters at the houſe of that affectionate kinſwoman, who made it her chief ſtudy to comfort and cheriſh the diſconſolate widow; and Jolter, in expectation

tion of the living, which was not yet vacant, remained in garison, in quality of land-steward upon our hero's country-estate. As for the lieutenant, our young gentleman communed with him, in a serious manner, about the commodore's proposal of his taking Mrs. Trunnion to wife; and Jack, being quite tired of the solitary situation of a batchelor, which nothing but the company of his old commander could have enabled him to support so long, far from discovering aversion to the match, observed with an arch smile, that it was not the first time he had commanded a vessel in the absence of Captain Trunnion; and therefore, if the widow was willing, he would chearfully stand by her helm, and, as he hoped the duty would not be of long continuance, do his endeavour to steer her safe into the port, where the commodore might come on board, and take charge of her again.

In consequence of this declaration, it was determined that Mr. Hatchway should make his addresses to Mrs. Trunnion, as soon as decency would permit her to receive them; and Mr. Clover and his wife promised to exert their influence in his behalf. Mean while, Jack was desired to live at the castle as usual, and assured, that it should be put wholly in his possession, as soon as he should be able to accomplish this matrimonial scheme.

When Peregrine had settled all these points to his own satisfaction, he took leave of all his friends, and repairing to the great city, purchased a new chariot and horses, put Pipes and another lacquey into rich liveries, took elegant lodgings in Pall-mall, and made a most remarkable appearance among people of fashion. It was owing to

to this equipage, and the gaiety of his perſonal deportment, that common fame, which is always a common liar, repreſented him as a young gentleman who had juſt ſucceeded to an eſtate of five thouſand pounds *per annum*, by the death of an uncle; that he was intitled to an equal fortune at the deceaſe of his own father, excluſive of two conſiderable jointures, which would devolve upon him, at the demiſe of his mother and aunt. This report (falſe and ridiculous as it was) he could not find in his heart to contradict; not but that he was ſorry to find himſelf ſo miſrepreſented: but his vanity would not allow him to take any ſtep that might diminiſh his importance in the opinion of thoſe who courted his acquaintance, on the ſuppoſition that his circumſtances were actually as affluent as they were ſaid to be. Nay, ſo much was he infatuated by this weakneſs, that he reſolved to encourage the deception, by living up to the report; and accordingly, engaged in the moſt expenſive parties of pleaſure; believing, that before his preſent finances ſhould be exhauſted, his fortune would be effectually made, by the perſonal accompliſhments he ſhould have occaſion to diſplay to the beau monde, in the courſe of his extravagance. In a word, vanity and pride were the ruling foibles of our adventurer, who imagined himſelf ſufficiently qualified to retrieve his fortune in various ſhapes, long before he could have any idea of want or difficulty. He thought he ſhould have it in his power, at any time, to make prize of a rich heireſs, or opulent widow; his ambition had already aſpired to the heart of a young handſome ducheſs dowager, to whoſe acquaintance he had found means to be introduced: or, ſhould matri-

mony

mony chance to be unſuitable to his inclinations, he never doubted, that by the intereſt he might acquire among the nobility, he ſhould be favoured with ſome lucrative poſt, that would amply recompenſe him for the liberality of his diſpoſition. There are many young men, who entertain the ſame expectations, with half the reaſon he had to be ſo preſumptuous.

In the midſt of theſe chimerical calculations, his paſſion for Emilia did not ſubſide; but, on the contrary, began to rage to ſuch an inflammation of deſire, that her idea interfered with every other reflection, and abſolutely diſabled him from proſecuting the other lofty ſchemes which his imagination had projected. He therefore laid down the honeſt reſolution of viſiting her in all the ſplendor of his ſituation, in order to practiſe upon her virtue with all his art and addreſs, to the utmoſt extent of his influence and fortune. Nay, ſo effectually had his guilty paſſion abſorb'd his principles of honour, conſcience, humanity, and regard for the commodore's laſt words, that he was baſe enough to rejoice at the abſence of his friend Godfrey, who being then with his regiment in Ireland, could not dive into his purpoſe, or take meaſures for fruſtrating his vicious deſign.

Fraught with theſe heroic ſentiments, he determined to ſet out for Suſſex in his chariot and ſix, attended by his valet de chambre and two footmen; and as he was now ſenſible, that in his laſt eſſay he had miſtaken his cue, he determined to change his battery, and ſap the fortreſs, by the moſt ſubmiſſive, ſoft, and inſinuating behaviour.

On

On the evening that preceded this purpoſed expedition, he went into one of the boxes at the play-houſe, as uſual, to ſhew himſelf to the ladies; and in reconnoitring the company through a glaſs, (for no other reaſon, but becauſe it was faſhionable to be purblind) perceived his miſtreſs very plainly dreſſed, in one of the ſeats above the ſtage, talking to another young woman of a very homely appearance. Though his heart beat the alarm with the utmoſt impatience at ſight of his Emilia, he was for ſome minutes deterred from obeying the impulſe of his love, by the preſence of ſome ladies of faſhion, who, he feared, would think the worſe of him, ſhould they ſee him make his compliments in public to a perſon of her figure. Nor would the violence of his inclination have ſo far prevailed over his pride, as to lead him thither, had not he recollected, that his quality-friends would look upon her as ſome handſome Abigail, with whom he had an affair of gallantry, and of conſequence gave him credit for the intrigue.

Encouraged by this ſuggeſtion, he complied with the dictates of love, and flew to the place where his charmer ſat. His air and dreſs were ſo remarkable, that it was almoſt impoſſible he ſhould have eſcaped the eyes of a curious obſerver, eſpecially as he had choſen a time for coming in, when his entrance could not fail to attract the notice of the ſpectators; I mean, when the whole houſe was huſhed in attention to the performance on the ſtage. Emilia, therefore, had perceived him at his firſt approach; ſhe found herſelf diſcovered by the direction of his glaſs, and gueſſing his intention by his abrupt retreat from the box, ſummoned all her fortitude to her aid,

aid, and prepared for his reception. He advanced to her with an air of eagerneſs and joy, tempered with modeſty and reſpect, and expreſſed his ſatisfaction at ſeeing her, with a ſeeming reverence of regard. Though ſhe was extremely well pleaſed at this unexpected behaviour, ſhe ſuppreſſed the emotions of her heart, and anſwered his compliments with affected eaſe and unconcern, ſuch as might denote the good humour of a perſon who meets by accident with an indifferent acquaintance. After having certified himſelf of her own good health, he very kindly inquired about her mother and Miſs Sophy, gave her to underſtand, that he had lately been favoured with a letter from Godfrey, and that he had actually intended to ſet out next morning on a viſit to Mrs. Gauntlet, which (now that he was ſo happy as to meet with her) he would poſtpone, until he ſhould have the pleaſure of attending her to the country. After having thanked him for his polite intention, ſhe told him, that her mother was expected in town in a few days, and that ſhe herſelf had come to London ſome weeks ago, to give her attendance upon her aunt, who had been dangerouſly ill, but was now pretty well recovered.

Although the converſation of courſe turned upon general topics, during the entertainment, he took all opportunities of being particular with his eyes, through which he conveyed a thouſand tender proteſtations. She ſaw, and inwardly rejoiced at the humility of his looks; but, far from rewarding it with one approving glance, ſhe induſtriouſly avoided this ocular intercourſe, and rather coquetted with a young gentleman that ogled her from the oppoſite box. Peregrine's

penetration eaſily detected her ſentiments, and he was nettled at her diſſimulation, which ſerved to confirm him in his unwarrantable deſigns upon her perſon. He perſiſted in his aſſiduities with indefatigable perſeverance; when the play was concluded, handed her and her companion to an hackney-coach, and with difficulty was permitted to eſcort them to the houſe of Emilia's uncle, to whom our hero was introduced by the young lady, as an intimate friend of her brother Godfrey.

The old gentleman, who was no ſtranger to the nature of Peregrine's connexion with his ſiſter's family, prevailed upon him to ſtay ſupper, and ſeemed particularly well pleaſed with his converſation and deportment, which, by help of his natural ſagacity, he wonderfully adapted to the humour of his entertainer. After ſupper, when the ladies were withdrawn, and the citizen called for his pipe, our ſly adventurer followed his example; and though he abhorred the plant, ſmoaked with an air of infinite ſatisfaction, and expatiated upon the virtues of tobacco, as if he had been deeply concerned in the Virginia trade. In the progreſs of the diſcourſe, he conſulted the merchant's diſpoſition; and the national debt coming upon the carpet, held forth upon the funds like a profeſſed broker. When the alderman complained of the reſtrictions and diſcouragement of trade, his gueſt inveighed againſt exorbitant duties, with the nature of which he ſeemed as well acquainted as any commiſſioner of the cuſtoms; ſo that the uncle was aſtoniſhed at the extent of his knowledge, and expreſſed his ſurprize, that a gay young gentleman, like him, ſhould have found either leiſure or inclination

tion to conſider ſubjects ſo foreign to the faſhionable amuſements of youth.

Pickle laid hold on this opportunity to tell him, that he was deſcended from a race of merchants; and that, early in life, he had made it his buſineſs to inſtruct himſelf in the different branches of trade, which he not only ſtudied as his family-profeſſion, but alſo as the ſource of all our national riches and power. He then launched out in praiſe of commerce, and the promoters thereof; and, by way of contraſt, employed all his ridicule, in drawing ſuch ludicrous pictures of the manners and education of what is called high life, that the trader's ſides were ſhaken by laughter, even to the danger of his life; and he looked upon our adventurer as a miracle of ſobriety and good ſenſe.

Having thus ingratiated himſelf with the uncle, Peregrine took his leave, and next day in the forenoon viſited the niece in his chariot, after ſhe had been admoniſhed by her kinſman to behave with circumſpection, and cautioned againſt neglecting or diſcouraging the addreſſes of ſuch a valuable admirer.

CHAP. LXXXI.

He proſecutes his deſign upon Emilia *with great art and perſeverance.*

OUR adventurer, having by his hypocriſy obtained free acceſs to his miſtreſs, began the ſiege, by profeſſing the moſt ſincere contrition for his former levity, and imploring her forgiveneſs with ſuch earneſt ſupplication, that,

guarded as ſhe was againſt his flattering arts, ſhe began to believe his proteſtations, which were even accompanied with tears, and abated a good deal of that ſeverity and diſtance ſhe had propoſed to maintain, during this interview. She would not, however, favour him with the leaſt acknowledgment of a mutual paſſion, becauſe, in the midſt of his vows of eternal conſtancy and truth, he did not mention one ſyllable of wedlock, though he was now intirely maſter of his own conduct; and this conſideration created a doubt, which fortified her againſt all his attacks: yet, what her diſcretion would have concealed, was diſcovered by her eyes, which, in ſpite of all her endeavours, breathed forth complacency and love. For, her inclination was flattered by her own ſelf-ſufficiency, which imputed her admirer's ſilence, in that particular, to the hurry and perturbation of his ſpirits, and perſuaded her, that he could not poſſibly regard her with any other than honourable intentions.

The inſidious lover exulted in the tenderneſs of her looks, from which he preſaged a compleat victory: but, that he might not over-ſhoot himſelf by his own precipitation, he would not run the riſk of declaring himſelf, until her heart ſhould be ſo far entangled within his ſnares, as that neither the ſuggeſtions of honour, prudence, or pride ſhould be able to diſengage it. Armed with this reſolution, he reſtrained the impatience of his temper within the limits of the moſt delicate deportment; and after having ſolicited and obtained permiſſion to attend her to the next opera, took her by the hand, and preſſing it to his lips in the moſt reſpectful manner, went away, leaving her in a moſt whimſical ſtate of ſuſ-

ſuſpence, checquered with an intereſting viciſſitude of hope and fear.

On the appointed day, he appeared again about five o'clock in the afternoon, and found her native charms ſo much improved by the advantages of dreſs, that he was tranſported with admiration and delight; and while he conducted her to the Hay-market, could ſcarce bridle the impetuoſity of his paſſion, ſo as to obſerve the forbearing maxims he had adopted. When ſhe entered the pit, he had abundance of food for the gratification of his vanity; for, in a moment, ſhe eclipſed all the female part of the audience, each individual allowing in her own heart, that the ſtranger was by far the handſomeſt woman there preſent, except herſelf.

Here it was that our hero enjoyed a double triumph; he was vain of this opportunity to enhance his reputation for gallantry among the ladies of faſhion, who knew him, and proud of an occaſion to diſplay his quality-acquaintance to Emilia, that ſhe might entertain the greater idea of the conqueſt ſhe had made, and pay the more deference to his importance in the ſequel of his addreſſes. That he might profit as much as poſſible by this ſituation, he went up and accoſted every perſon in the pit, with whom he ever had the leaſt communication, whiſpered and laughed with an affected air of familiarity, and even bowed at a diſtance to ſome of the nobility, on the ſlender foundation of having ſtood near them at court, or preſented them with a pinch of Rappee at White's chocolate-houſe.

This ridiculous oſtentation, though now practiſed with a view of promoting his deſign, was a weakneſs that, in ſome degree, infected the

whole of his behaviour; for nothing gave him ſo much joy in converſation, as an opportunity of giving the company to underſtand, how well he was with perſons of diſtinguiſhed rank and character: he would often (for example) obſerve, as it were occaſionally, that the duke of G——— was one of the beſt natured men in the world, and illuſtrate his aſſertion by ſome inſtance of his affability, in which he himſelf was concerned: then, by an abrupt tranſition, he would repeat ſome repartee of lady T——, and mention a certain *bon mot* of the earl of C——, which was uttered in his hearing.

Abundance of young men, in this manner, make free with the names, though they have never had acceſs to the perſons of the nobility: but, this was not the caſe with Peregrine, who, in conſideration of his appearance and ſuppoſed fortune, together with the advantage of his introduction, was by this time freely admitted to the tables of the great.

In his return with Emilia from the opera, though he ſtill maintained the moſt ſcrupulous decorum in his behaviour, he plied her with the moſt paſſionate expreſſions of love, ſqueezed her hand with great fervency, proteſted that his whole ſoul was ingroſſed by her idea, and that he could not exiſt independent of her favour. Pleaſed as ſhe was with his warm and pathetic addreſſes, together with the reſpectful manner of his making love, ſhe yet had prudence and reſolution ſufficient to contain her tenderneſs, which was ready to run over; being fortified againſt his arts, by reflecting, that if his aim was honourable, it was now his buſineſs to declare it. On this conſideration, ſhe refuſed to make any ſerious reply to his

his earneſt expoſtulations, but affected to receive them as the undetermined effuſions of gallantry and good breeding.

This fictitious gaiety and good humour, though it baffled his hope of extorting from her an acknowledgment of which he might have taken immediate advantage, nevertheleſs encouraged him to obſerve, (as the chariot paſſed along the Strand) that the night was far advanced; that ſupper would certainly be over, before they could reach her uncle's houſe; and to propoſe, that he ſhould wait upon her to ſome place, where they might be accommodated with a ſlight refreſhment. She was offended at the freedom of this propoſal, which, however, ſhe treated as a joke, thanking him for his courteous offer, and aſſuring him, that when ſhe ſhould be diſpoſed for a tavern-treat, he alone ſhould have the opportunity of beſtowing it.

Her kinſman being engaged with company abroad, and her aunt retired to reſt, he had the good fortune to enjoy a *tête a tête* with her during a whole hour, which he employed with ſuch conſummate ſkill, that her caution was almoſt overcome. He not only aſſailed her with the artillery of ſighs, vows, prayers and tears, but even pawned his honour in behalf of his love. He ſwore with many imprecations, that although her heart were ſurrendered to him at diſcretion, there was a principle within him, which would never allow him to injure ſuch innocence and beauty; and the tranſports of his paſſion had, upon this occaſion, ſo far overſhot his purpoſe, that if ſhe had demanded an explanation, while he was thus agitated, he would have engaged himſelf to her wiſh by ſuch ties, as he could not poſſibly break,

with any regard to his reputation. But, from ſuch expoſtulation, ſhe was deterred partly by pride, and partly by the dread of finding herſelf miſtaken in ſuch an intereſting conjecture. She therefore enjoyed the preſent flattering appearance of her fate, was prevailed upon to accept the jewels which he had purchaſed with part of his winning at Bath, and with the moſt inchanting condeſcenſion ſubmitted to a warm embrace, when he took his leave, after having obtained permiſſion to viſit her, as often as his inclination and convenience would permit.

In his return to his own lodgings, he was buoyed up with his ſucceſs to an extravagance of hope, already congratulated himſelf upon his triumph over Emilia's virtue, and began to project future conqueſts among the moſt dignified characters of the female ſex. But his attention was not at all diſſipated by theſe vain reflections; he reſolved to concentrate the whole exertion of his ſoul upon the execution of his preſent plan, deſiſted, in the mean time, from all other ſchemes of pleaſure, intereſt and ambition, and took lodgings in the city, for the more commodious accompliſhment of his purpoſe.

While our lover's imagination was thus agreeably regaled, his miſtreſs did not enjoy her expectations, without the intervention of doubts and anxiety. His ſilence touching the final aim of his addreſſes was a myſtery on which ſhe was afraid of exerciſing her ſagacity; and her uncle tormented her with inquiries into the circumſtances of Peregrine's profeſſions and deportment. Rather than give this relation the leaſt cauſe of ſuſpicion, which muſt have cut off all intercourſe betwixt her and her admirer, ſhe ſaid every thing which

which ſhe thought would ſatisfy his care and concern for her welfare; and in conſequence of ſuch repreſentation, ſhe enjoyed, without reſerve, the company of our adventurer, who proſecuted his plan with ſurpriſing eagerneſs and perſeverance.

CHAP. LXXXII.

He prevails upon Emilia *to accompany him to a maſquerade, makes a treacherous attempt upon her affection, and meets with a deſerved repulſe.*

SCARCE a night elapſed in which he did not conduct her to ſome public entertainment; and when, by dint of his inſidious carriage, he thought himſelf in full poſſeſſion of her confidence and affection, he lay in wait for an opportunity; and hearing her obſerve in converſation, that ſhe had never been at a maſquerade, begged leave to attend her to the next ball; at the ſame time, extending his invitation to the young lady, in whoſe company he had found her at the play, ſhe being preſent when this ſubject of diſcourſe was introduced. He had flattered himſelf, that this gentlewoman would decline the propoſal, as ſhe was a perſon ſeemingly of a demure diſpoſition, who had been born and bred in the city, where ſuch diverſions are looked upon as ſcenes of lewdneſs and debauchery. For once, however, he reckoned without his hoſt; curioſity is as prevalent in the city as at the court-end of the town: Emilia no ſooner ſignified her aſſent to his propoſal, than her friend, with an air of ſatisfaction, agreed to make one of the *partie*; and he was obliged to thank her for that com-

plaiſance which laid him under infinite mortification. He ſet his genius at work, to invent ſome ſcheme for preventing her unſeaſonable intruſion. Had an opportunity offered, he would have acted as her phyſician, and adminiſtered a medicine that would have laid her under the neceſſity of ſtaying at home: but his acquaintance with her being too ſlight to furniſh him with the means of executing this expedient, he deviſed another, which was practiſed with all imaginable ſucceſs. Underſtanding that her grandmother had left her a ſum of money independent of her parents, he conveyed a letter to her mother, intimating, that her daughter, on pretence of going to the maſquerade, intended to beſtow herſelf in marriage to a certain perſon, and that in a few days ſhe would be informed of the circumſtances of the whole intrigue, provided ſhe would keep this information ſecret, and contrive ſome excuſe for detaining the young lady at home, without giving her cauſe to believe ſhe was apprized of her intention. This billet, ſubſcribed, *Your well-wiſher and unknown humble ſervant*, had the deſired effect upon the careful matron, who, on the ball-day, feigned herſelf ſo extremely ill, that miſs could not, with any decency, quit her mamma's apartment; and therefore ſent her apology to Emilia in the afternoon, immediately after the arrival of Peregrine, who pretended to be very much afflicted with the diſappointment, while his heart throbbed with a tranſport of joy.

About ten o'clock the lovers ſet out for the Hay-market, he being dreſſed in the habit of Pantaloon, and ſhe in that of Columbine; and they had ſcarce entered the houſe, when the muſic ſtruck up, the curtain was withdrawn, and

the whole ſcene diſplayed at once, to the admiration of Emilia, whoſe expectation was infinitely ſurpaſſed by this exhibition. Our gallant having conducted her through all the different apartments, and deſcribed the œconomy of the place, led her into the circle, and, in their turn, they danced ſeveral minuets; then going to the ſideboard, he prevailed upon her to eat ſome ſweetmeets and drink a glaſs of Champagne; and, after a ſecond review of the company, they engaged in country-dances, at which exerciſe they continued, until our adventurer concluded, that his partner's blood was ſufficiently warmed for the proſecution of his deſign. On this ſuppoſition, which was built upon her declaring, that ſhe was thirſty and fatigued, he perſuaded her to take a little refreſhment and repoſe; and for that purpoſe, handed her down ſtairs into the eating-room, where having ſeated her on the floor, he preſented her with a glaſs of wine and water; and as ſhe complained of being faint, enriched the draught with ſome drops of a certain elixir, which he recommended as a moſt excellent reſtorative, though it was no other than a ſtimulating tincture, which he had treacherouſly provided for the occaſion. Having ſwallowed this potion, by which her ſpirits were manifeſtly exhilerated, ſhe ate a ſlice of ham with the wing of a cold pullet, and concluded the meal with a glaſs of Burgundy, which ſhe drank at the earneſt intreaty of her admirer. Theſe extraordinary cordials co-operating with the ferment of her blood, which was heated by violent motion, could not fail to affect the conſtitution of a delicate young creature, who was naturally ſprightly and volatile. Her eyes began to ſparkle with un-

uſual fire and vivacity, a thouſand brilliant ſallies of wit eſcaped her, and every maſk that accoſted her, underwent ſome ſmarting repartee.

Peregrine, overjoyed at the ſucceſs of his adminiſtration, propoſed that they ſhould reſume their places at the country-dances, with a view to promote and aſſiſt the efficacy of his elixir; and when he thought her diſpoſition was properly adapted for the theme, began to ply her with all the elocution of love. In order to elevate his own ſpirits to that pitch of reſolution which his ſcheme required, he drank two whole bottles of Burgundy, which inflamed his paſſion to ſuch a degree, that he found himſelf capable of undertaking and perpetrating any ſcheme for the gratification of his deſire.

Emilia, warmed by ſo many concurring incentives, in favour of the man ſhe loved, abated conſiderably of her wonted reſerve, liſtened to his proteſtations with undiſſembled pleaſure, and in the confidence of her ſatisfaction, even owned him abſolute maſter of her affections. Raviſhed with this confeſſion, he now deemed himſelf on the brink of reaping the delicious fruits of his art and aſſiduity; and the morning being already pretty far advanced, aſſented with rapture to the firſt propoſal ſhe made of retiring to her lodgings. The blinds of the chariot being pulled up, he took advantage of the favourable ſituation of her thoughts; and on pretence of being whimſical, in conſequence of the wine he had ſwallowed, claſped her in his arms, and imprinted a thouſand kiſſes on her pouting lips, a freedom which ſhe pardoned as the privilege of intoxication. While he thus indulged himſelf with impunity, the carriage halted, and Pipes opening the door, his

his maſter handed her into the paſſage, before ſhe perceived that it was not her uncle's houſe, at which they had alighted.

Alarmed at this diſcovery, ſhe with ſome confuſion deſired to know his reaſon for conducting her to a ſtrange place at theſe hours: but he made no reply, until he had led her into an apartment, when he gave her to underſtand, that as her uncle's family muſt be diſturbed by her going thither ſo late in the night, and the ſtreets near Temple-bar were infeſted by a multitude of robbers and cut-throats, he had ordered his coachman to halt at this houſe, which was kept by a relation of his, a mighty good ſort of a gentlewoman, who was proud of an opportunity to accommodate a perſon for whom he was known to entertain ſuch tenderneſs and eſteem.

Emilia had too much penetration to be impoſed upon by this plauſible pretext: in ſpite of her partiality for Peregrine, which had never been inflamed to ſuch a pitch of complacency before, ſhe comprehended his whole plan in a twinkling; and though her blood boiled with indignation, thanked him, with an affected air of ſerenity, for his kind concern, and expreſſed her obligation to his couſin; but, at the ſame time, inſiſted upon going home, leſt her abſence ſhould terrify her uncle and aunt, who ſhe knew would not retire to reſt, till her return.

He urged her, with a thouſand remonſtrances, to conſult her own eaſe and ſafety, promiſing to ſend Pipes into the city, for the ſatisfaction of her relations: but finding her obſtinately deaf to his intreaties, he aſſured her, that he would in a few minutes comply with her requeſt; and, in the mean time, begg'd ſhe would fortify herſelf againſt

the cold with a cordial, which he poured out in her preſence, and which (now that her ſuſpicion was arouſed) ſhe refuſed to taſte, notwithſtanding all his importunities. He then fell upon his knees before her, and the tears guſhing from his eyes, ſwore that his paſſion was wound up to ſuch a pitch of impatience, that he could no longer live upon the unſubſtantial food of expectation; and that, if ſhe would not vouchſafe to crown his happineſs, he would forthwith ſacrifice himſelf to her diſdain. Such an abrupt addreſs, accompanied with all the ſymptoms of frantic agitation, could not fail to perplex and affright the gentle Emilia, who, after ſome recollection, replied with a reſolute tone, that ſhe could not ſee what reaſon he had to complain of her reſerve, which ſhe was not at liberty to lay intirely aſide, until he ſhould have avowed his intentions in form, and obtained the ſanction of thoſe whom it was her duty to obey. "Divine creature! (cried he, ſeizing her hand, and preſſing it to his lips) it is from you alone I hope for that condeſcenſion, which would overwhelm me with tranſports of celeſtial bliſs. The ſentiments of parents are ſordid, ſilly, and confined; ſeek not then to ſubject my paſſion to ſuch low reſtrictions as were calculated for the purpoſes of common life. My love is too delicate and refined, to wear thoſe vulgar fetters, which ſerve only to deſtroy the merit of voluntary affection, and to upbraid a man inceſſantly with the articles of compulſion, under which he lies. My dear angel! ſpare me the mortification of being compelled to love you, and reign ſole empreſs of my heart and fortune. I will not affront you ſo much as to talk of ſettlements; my

all

all is at your diſpoſal. In this pocket-book are notes to the amount of two thouſand pounds; do me the pleaſure to accept of them; to-morrow I will lay ten thouſand more in your lap. In a word, you ſhall be miſtreſs of my whole eſtate, and I ſhall think myſelf happy in living dependent on your bounty!"

Heavens! what were the emotions of the virtuous, the ſenſible, the delicate, the tender Emilia's heart, when ſhe heard this inſolent declaration from the mouth of a man, whom ſhe had honoured with her affection and eſteem! It was not ſimply horror, grief, or indignation that ſhe felt, in conſequence of this unworthy treatment, but the united pangs of all together, which produced a ſort of hyſteric laugh, while ſhe told him, that ſhe could not help admiring his generoſity.

Deceived by this convulſion, and the ironical compliment that attended it, the lover thought he had already made great progreſs in his operations, and that it was now his buſineſs to ſtorm the fort by a vigorous aſſault, that he might ſpare her the confuſion of yielding without reſiſtance. Poſſeſſed by this vain ſuggeſtion, he ſtarted up, and folding her in his arms, began to obey the furious dictates of his unruly and ungenerous deſire; upon which, with an air of cool determination, ſhe demanded a parley; and when, upon her repeated requeſt, he granted it, addreſſed herſelf to him in theſe words, while her eyes gleamed with all the dignity of the moſt awful reſentment. "Sir, I ſcorn to upbraid you with a repetition of your former vows and proteſtations, nor will I recapitulate the little arts you have practiſed to enſnare my heart; becauſe, though

by

by dint of the moſt perfidious diſſimulation, you have found means to deceive my opinion, your utmoſt efforts have never been able to lull the vigilance of my conduct, or to engage my affection beyond the power of diſcarding you without a tear, whenever my honour ſhould demand ſuch a ſacrifice. Sir, you are unworthy of my concern or regret, and the ſigh that now ſtruggles from my breaſt, is the reſult of ſorrow, for my own want of diſcernment. As for your preſent attempt upon my chaſtity, I deſpiſe your power, as I deteſt your intention. Though, under the maſk of the moſt delicate reſpect, you have decoyed me from the immediate protection of my friends, and contrived other impious ſtratagems to ruin my peace and reputation, I confide too much in my own innocence, and the authority of the law, to admit one thought of fear, much leſs to ſink under the horror of this ſhocking ſituation, into which I have been ſeduced. Sir, your behaviour on this occaſion, is in all reſpects low and contemptible: for, ruffian as you are, you durſt not harbour one thought of executing your execrable ſcheme, while you knew my brother was near enough to prevent, or revenge the inſult; ſo that you muſt not only be a treacherous villain, but alſo a moſt deſpicable coward." Having expreſſed herſelf in this manner, with a moſt majeſtic ſeverity of aſpect, ſhe opened the door, and walked down ſtairs with ſurpriſing reſolution, committed herſelf to the care of a watchman, who accommodated her with a hackney-chair, in which ſhe was ſafely conveyed to her uncle's houſe.

Mean while, the lover was ſo confounded and over-awed, by theſe cutting reproaches, and her ani-

animated behaviour, that all his reſolution forſook him, and he found himſelf not only incapable of obſtructing her retreat, but even of uttering one ſyllable to deprecate her wrath, or extenuate the guilt of his own conduct. The nature of his diſappointment, and the keen remorſe that ſeized him, when he reflected upon the diſhonourable predicament in which his character ſtood with Emilia, raiſed ſuch perturbation in his mind, that his ſilence was ſucceeded by a violent fit of diſtraction, during which he raved like a Bedlamite, and acted a thouſand extravagancies, which convinced the people of the houſe, (a certain bagnio) that he had actually loſt his wits. Pipes, with great concern, adopted the ſame opinion; and, being aſſiſted by the waiters, hindered him, by main force, from running out and purſuing the fair fugitive, whom, in his delirium, he alternately curſed and commended, with horrid imprecations, and laviſh applauſe. His faithful valet, having waited two whole hours, in hope of ſeeing this guſt of paſſion overblown, and perceiving that the paroxyſm ſeemed rather to increaſe, very prudently ſent for a phyſician of his maſter's acquaintance, who having conſidered the circumſtances and ſymptoms of the diſorder, directed, that he ſhould be plentifully blooded, without loſs of time, and preſcribed a draught to compoſe the tumult of his ſpirits. Theſe orders being punctually performed, he grew more calm and tractable, recovered his reflection ſo far, as to be aſhamed of the extaſy he had undergone, ſuffered himſelf quietly to be undreſſed, and put to bed, where the fatigue occaſioned by his exerciſe at the maſquerade, co-operated with the preſent diſſipation of his ſpirits to lull him in a profound

found ſleep, which greatly tended to the preſervation of his intellects: not that he found himſelf in a ſtate of perfect tranquillity, when he waked about noon; the remembrance of what had paſſed overwhelmed him with mortification. Emilia's invectives ſtill ſounded in his ears; and while he deeply reſented her diſdain, he could not help admiring her ſpirit, and in his heart did homage to her charms.

CHAP. LXXXIII.

He endeavours to reconcile himſelf to his miſtreſs, and expoſtulates with the uncle, who forbids him the houſe.

IN this ſtate of diviſion, he went home to his own lodgings in a chair; and while he deliberated with himſelf, whether he ſhould relinquiſh the purſuit, and endeavour to baniſh her idea from his breaſt, or go immediately and humble himſelf before his exaſperated miſtreſs, and offer his hand as an atonement for his crime, his ſervant put in his hand a packet, which had been delivered by a ticket-porter at the door. He no ſooner perceived that the ſuperſcription was in Emilia's hand-writing, than he gueſſed the nature of the contents; and opening the ſeal with diſordered eagerneſs, found the jewels he had given to her, incloſed in a billet couched in theſe words.

"THAT I may have no cauſe to reproach myſelf with having retained the leaſt memorial of a wretch whom I equally deſpiſe and abhor, I take this opportunity of reſtoring theſe in-

ineffectual inſtruments of his infamous deſign upon the honour of Emilia."

His chagrin was ſo much galled and inflamed by the bitterneſs of this contemptuous meſſage, that he gnawed his fingers till the blood ran over his nails, and even wept with vexation. Sometimes he vowed revenge againſt her haughty virtue, and reviled himſelf for his precipitate declaration, before his ſcheme was brought to maturity; then he would conſider her behaviour with reverence and regard, and bow before the irreſiſtible power of her attractions. In ſhort, his breaſt was torn by conflicting paſſions; love, ſhame, and remorſe contended with vanity, ambition, and revenge; and the ſuperiority was ſtill doubtful, when headſtrong deſire interpoſed, and decided in favour of an attempt towards a reconciliation with the offended fair.

Impelled by this motive, he ſet out in the afternoon for the houſe of her uncle, not without hopes of that tender enjoyment, which never fails to attend an accommodation betwixt two lovers of taſte and ſenſibility. Though the conſciouſneſs of his treſpaſs encumbered him with an air of awkward confuſion, he was too confident of his own qualifications and addreſs to deſpair of forgiveneſs; and by that time he arrived at the citizen's gate, he had conned a very artful and pathetic harangue, which he propoſed to utter in his own behalf, laying the blame of his conduct on the impetuoſity of his paſſion, incenſed by the Burgundy, which he had too liberally drank: but he did not meet with an opportunity to avail himſelf of this preparation. Emilia, ſuſpecting that he would take ſome ſtep of this kind to retrieve her

her favour, had gone abroad on pretence of viſiting, after having ſignified to her kinſman, her reſolution to avoid the company of Peregrine, on account of ſome ambiguities which (ſhe ſaid) were laſt night remarkable in his demeanour, at the maſquerade. She choſe to inſinuate her ſuſpicions in theſe hints, rather than give an explicit detail of the young man's diſhonourable contrivance, which might have kindled the reſentment of the family to ſome dangerous pitch of animoſity and revenge.

Our adventurer, finding himſelf baffled in his expectation of ſeeing her, inquired for the old gentleman, with whom he thought he had influence enough to make his apology good, in caſe he ſhould find him prepoſſeſſed by the young lady's information. But here too he was diſappointed; the uncle had gone to dine in the country, and his wife was indiſpoſed; ſo that he had no pretext for ſtaying in the houſe, till the return of his charmer. Being, however, fruitful of expedients, he diſmiſſed his chariot, and took poſſeſſion of a room in a tavern, the windows of which fronted the merchant's gate; and there he propoſed to watch until he ſhould ſee her approach. This ſcheme he put in practice with indefatigable patience, though it was not attended with the expected ſucceſs.

Emilia, whoſe caution was equally vigilant and commendable, foreſeeing that ſhe might be expoſed to the fertility of his invention, came home by a private paſſage, and entered by a poſtern, which was altogether unknown to her admirer; and her uncle did not arrive, until it was ſo late, that he could not with any decency demand a conference.

Next morning, he did not fail to preſent himſelf at the door, and his miſtreſs being denied by her own expreſs direction, inſiſted upon ſeeing the maſter of the houſe, who received him with ſuch coldneſs of civility, as plainly gave him to underſtand, that he was acquainted with the diſpleaſure of his niece. He therefore, with an air of candour, told the citizen, he could eaſily perceive, by his behaviour, that he was the confidant of Miſs Emily, of whom he was come to aſk pardon for the offence he had given; and did not doubt, if he could be admitted to her preſence, that he ſhould be able to convince her, that he had not erred intentionally, or at leaſt propoſe ſuch reparation, as would effectually atone for his fault.

To this remonſtrance the merchant, without any ceremony or circumlocution, anſwered, that though he was ignorant of the nature of his offence, he was very certain, that it muſt have been ſomething very flagrant, that could irritate his niece to ſuch a degree, againſt a perſon for whom ſhe had formerly a moſt particular regard. He owned, ſhe had declared her intention to renounce his acquaintance for ever, and, doubtleſs, ſhe had good reaſon for ſo doing; neither would he undertake to promote an accommodation, unleſs he would give him full power to treat on the ſcore of matrimony, which he ſuppoſed would be the only means of evincing his own ſincerity, and obtaining Emilia's forgiveneſs.

Peregrine's pride was kindled by this blunt declaration, which he could not help conſidering as the reſult of a ſcheme concerted betwixt the young lady and her uncle, in order to take the advantage of his heat. He therefore replied, with

ma-

manifeſt ſigns of diſguſt, that he did not apprehend there was any occaſion for a mediator to reconcile the difference betwixt Emilia and him; and that all he deſired, was an opportunity of pleading in his own behalf.

The citizen frankly told him, that as his niece had expreſſed an earneſt deſire of avoiding his company, he would not put the leaſt conſtraint upon her inclination: and in the mean time gave him to know, that he was particularly engaged.

Our hero glowing with indignation at this ſupercilious treatment; "I was in the wrong (ſaid he) to look for good manners, ſo far on this ſide of Temple-bar: but, you muſt give me leave to tell you, Sir, that unleſs I am favoured with an interview with Miſs Gauntlet, I ſhall conclude, that you have actually laid a conſtraint upon her inclination, for ſome ſiniſter purpoſes of your own." "Sir, (replied the old gentleman) you are welcome to make what concluſions ſhall ſeem good unto your own imagination; but, pray be ſo good as to allow me the privilege of being maſter in my own houſe." So ſaying, he very complaiſantly ſhewed him to the door; and our lover, being diffident of his own temper, as well as afraid of being uſed with greater indignity, in a place where his perſonal proweſs would only ſerve to heighten his diſgrace, quitted the houſe in a tranſport of rage which he could not wholly ſuppreſs, telling the landlord, that if his age did not protect him, he would have chaſtiſed him for his inſolent behaviour.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXXXIV.

He projects a violent ſcheme, in conſequence of which he is involved in a moſt fatiguing adventure, which greatly tends towards the augmentation of his chagrin.

THUS debarred of perſonal communication with his miſtreſs, he eſſayed to retrieve her good graces by the moſt ſubmiſſive and pathetic letters, which he conveyed by divers artifices to her peruſal; but reaping no manner of benefit from theſe endeavours, his paſſion acquired a degree of impatience, little inferior to downright frenzy; and he determined to run every riſk of life, fortune, and reputation, rather than deſiſt from his unjuſtifiable purſuit. Indeed his reſentment was now as deeply concerned as his love, and each of theſe paſſions equally turbulent and loud in demanding gratification. He kept centinels continually in pay, to give him notice of her outgoings, in expectation of finding ſome opportunity to carry her off; but her circumſpection entirely fruſtrated this deſign; for ſhe ſuſpected every thing of that ſort from a diſpoſition like his, and regulated her motions accordingly.

Baffled by her prudence and penetration, he altered his plan, and, on pretence of being called to his country-houſe by ſome affair of importance, he departed from London, and taking lodgings at a farmer's houſe, that ſtood near the road through which ſhe muſt have neceſſarily paſſed, in her return to her mother, concealed himſelf from all intercourſe, except with his valet de chambre and Pipes, who had orders to ſcour the country, and

and reconnoitre every horſe, coach, or carriage, that ſhould appear on that high way, with a view of intercepting his Amanda in her paſſage.

He had waited in this ambuſcade a whole week, when his valet gave him notice, that he and his fellow-ſcout had diſcovered a chaiſe and ſix, driving at full ſpeed towards them; upon which, they had flapped their hats over their eyes, ſo as that they might not be known, in caſe they ſhould be ſeen, and concealed themſelves behind a hedge, from whence they could perceive in the carriage, as it paſſed, a young man plainly dreſſed, with a lady in a maſk, of the exact ſize, ſhape, and air of Emilia; and that Pipes followed them at a diſtance, while he rode back to communicate this piece of intelligence.

Peregrine would ſcarce allow him time to conclude his information; he ran down to the ſtable, where his horſe was kept ready ſaddled for the purpoſe, and never doubting that the lady in queſtion was his miſtreſs, attended by one of her uncle's clerks, mounted immediately, and rode full gallop after the chaiſe, which (when he had proceeded about two miles) he underſtood from Pipes, had put up at a neighbouring inn. Though his inclination prompted him to enter her apartment without farther delay, he ſuffered himſelf to be diſſuaded from taking ſuch a precipitate ſtep, by his privy counſellor, who obſerved, that it would be impracticable to execute his purpoſe of conveying her againſt her will from a public inn, that ſtood in the midſt of a populous village, which would infallibly riſe in her defence; and adviſed him to lie in wait for the chaiſe, in ſome remote and private part of the road, where they might accompliſh their aim without difficulty or danger.

danger. In conſequence of this admonition, our adventurer ordered Pipes to reconnoitre the inn, that ſhe might not eſcape another way, while he and the valet, in order to avoid being ſeen, took a circuit by an unfrequented path, and placed themſelves in ambuſh, on a ſpot which they choſe for the ſcene of their atchievement. Here they tarried a full hour, without ſeeing the carriage, or hearing from their centinel; ſo that the youth, unable to exert his patience one moment longer, left the foreigner in his ſtation, and rode back to his faithful lacquey, who aſſured him, that the travellers had not yet hove up their anchor, or proceeded on their voyage.

Notwithſtanding this intimation, Pickle began to entertain ſuch alarming ſuſpicions, that he could not refrain from advancing to the gate, and inquiring for the company which had lately arrived in a chaiſe and ſix. The inn-keeper, who was not at all pleaſed with the behaviour of thoſe paſſengers, did not think proper to obſerve the inſtructions he had received; on the contrary, he plainly told him, that the chaiſe did not halt, but only entered at one door, and went out at the other, with a view to deceive thoſe who purſued it, as he gueſſed from the words of the gentleman, who had earneſtly deſired, that his route might be concealed from any perſon who ſhould inquire about their motions. "As for my own peart, meaſter, (continued this charitable publican) I believes as how they are no better than they ſhould be, elſe they wouldn't be in ſuch a deadly fear of being overtaken. Methinks, (ſaid I) when I ſaw them in ſuch a roundy pother to be gone, oddsheartikins! this muſt be ſome Lundon prentice running away with

his meaſter's daughter, as ſure as I'm a living ſoul. But, be he who will, ſartain it is, a has nothing of the gentleman about en; for, thof a axed ſuch a favour, a never once put hand in pocket, or ſaid, "Dog, will you drink?" Howſomever, that don't argufy in reverence of his being in a hurry; and a man may be ſometimes a little too judgmatical in his conjunctures." In all probability, this loquacious landlord would have ſerved the travellers effectually, had Peregrine heard him to an end; but this impetuous youth, far from liſtening to the ſequel of his obſervations, interrupted him in the beginning of his career, by aſking eagerly, which road they followed; and having received the inn-keeper's directions, clapp'd ſpurs to his horſe, commanding Pipes to make the valet acquainted with his courſe, that they might attend him with all imaginable diſpatch.

By the publican's account of their conduct, his former opinion was fully confirmed; he plied his ſteed to the height of his mettle, and ſo much was his imagination ingroſſed by the proſpect of having Emilia in his power, that he did not perceive the road on which he travelled, was quite different from that which led to the habitation of Mrs. Gauntlet. The valet de chambre was an utter ſtranger to that part of the country; and as for Mr. Pipes, ſuch conſiderations were altogether foreign to the œconomy of his reflection.

Ten long miles had our hero rode, when his eyes were bleſſed with the ſight of the chaiſe aſcending an hill, at the diſtance of a good league; upon which, he doubled his diligence in ſuch a manner, that he gained upon the carriage every minute, and at length approached ſo near to it

tha

that he could diſcern the lady and her conductor, with their heads thruſt out at the windows, looking back, and ſpeaking to the driver alternately, as if they earneſtly beſought him to augment the ſpeed of his cattle.

Being thus, as it were, in ſight of port, while he croſſed the road, his horſe happened to plunge into a cart-rut, with ſuch violence, that he was thrown ſeveral yards over his head; and the beaſt's ſhoulder being ſlipt by the fall, he found himſelf diſabled from plucking the fruit, which was almoſt within his reach; for he had left his ſervants at a conſiderable diſtance behind him; and although they had been at his back, and ſupplied him with another horſe, they were ſo indifferently mounted, that he could not reaſonably expect to overtake the flyers, who profited ſo much by this diſaſter, that the chaiſe vaniſhed in a moment.

It may be eaſily conceived, how a young man of his diſpoſition paſſed his time, in this tantalizing ſituation. He ejaculated with great fervency, but his prayers were not the effects of reſignation. He ran back on foot with incredible ſpeed, in order to meet his valet, whom he unhorſed in a twinkling; and taking his ſeat, began to exerciſe his whip and ſpurs, after having ordered the Swiſs to follow him on the other gelding, and commit the lame hunter to the care of Pipes.

Matters being adjuſted in this manner, our adventurer proſecuted the race with all his might; and having made ſome progreſs, was informed by a countryman, that the chaiſe had ſtruck off into another road, and, according to his judgment, was by that time about three miles ahead;

though, in all probability, the horſes would not be able to hold out much longer, becauſe they ſeemed to be quite ſpent when they paſſed his door. Encouraged by this intimation, Peregrine puſhed on with great alacrity; though he could not regain ſight of the deſired object, till the clouds of night began to deepen, and even then he enjoyed nothing more than a tranſient glimpſe; for the carriage was no ſooner ſeen, than ſhrouded again from his view. Theſe vexatious circumſtances animated his endeavours, while they irritated his chagrin; and in ſhort, he continued his purſuit till the night was far advanced, and himſelf ſo uncertain about the object of his care, that he entered a ſolitary inn, with a view of obtaining ſome intelligence, and to his infinite joy, perceived the chaiſe ſtanding by itſelf, and the horſes panting in the yard. In full confidence of his having arrived at laſt at the goal of all his wiſhes, he alighted inſtantaneouſly, and running up to the coachman, with a piſtol in his hand, commanded him, in an imperious tone, to conduct him to the lady's chamber, on pain of death. The driver, affrighted at this menacing addreſs, proteſted with great humility, that he did not know whither his fare had retired; for that he himſelf was paid and diſmiſſed from this ſervice, becauſe he would not undertake to drive them all night croſs the country, without ſtopping to refreſh his horſes: but he promiſed to go in queſt of the waiter, who would ſhew him to their apartment. He was accordingly detached on that errand, while our hero ſtood centinel at the gate, till the arrival of his valet de chambre, who joining him by accident, before the coachman returned, relieved him in his watch; and then the young gentleman,

man, exaſperated at his meſſenger's delay, ruſhed with fury in his eyes from room to room, denouncing vengeance upon the whole family; but he did not meet with one living ſoul, until he entered the garret, where he found the landlord and his wife in bed. This chicken-hearted couple, by the light of a ruſh-candle that burned on the hearth, ſeeing a ſtranger burſt into the chamber, in ſuch a terrible attitude, were ſeized with conſternation; and exalting their voices, in a moſt lamentable ſtrain, begg'd for the paſſion of Chriſt, that he would ſpare their lives, and take all they had.

Peregrine, gueſſing from this exclamation, and the circumſtance of their being abed, that they miſtook him for a robber, and were ignorant of that which he wanted to know, diſpelled their terror, by making them acquainted with the cauſe of his viſit, and deſired the huſband to get up with all poſſible diſpatch, in order to aſſiſt and attend him in his ſearch.

Thus reinforced, he rummaged every corner of the inn, and at laſt finding the oſtler in the ſtable, was by him informed, (to his unſpeakable mortification) that the gentleman and lady who arrived in the chaiſe, had immediately hired poſt-horſes for a certain village at the diſtance of fifteen miles, and departed without halting for the leaſt refreſhment. Our adventurer, mad with his diſappointment, mounted his horſe in an inſtant, and, with his attendant, took the ſame road, with full determination to die, rather than deſiſt from the proſecution of his deſign. He had, by this time, rodeupwards of thirty miles ſince three o'clock in the afternoon; ſo that the horſes were almoſt quite jaded, and travelled this ſtage

ſo ſlowly, that it was morning before they reached the place of their deſtination, where, far from finding the fugitives, he underſtood, that no ſuch perſons as he deſcribed had paſſed that way, and that, in all likelihood, they had taken a quite contrary direction, while, in order to miſlead him in his purſuit, they had amuſed the hoſtler with a falſe route. This conjecture was ſtrengthned, by his perceiving (now for the firſt time) that he had deviated a conſiderable way from the road, through which they muſt have journeyed, in order to arrive at the place of her mother's reſidence; and theſe ſuggeſtions utterly deprived him of the ſmall remains of recollection, which he had hitherto retained. His eyes rolled about, witneſſing rage and diſtraction; he foamed at the mouth, ſtamped upon the ground with great violence, uttered incoherent imprecations againſt himſelf and all mankind, and would have ſallied forth again he knew not whither, upon the ſame horſe, which he had already almoſt killed with fatigue, had not his confident found means to quiet the tumult of his thoughts, and recal his reflection, by repreſenting the condition of the poor animals, and adviſing him to hire freſh horſes, and ride poſt acroſs the country, to the village in the neighbourhood of Mrs. Gauntlet's habitation, where they ſhould infallibly intercept the daughter, provided they could get the ſtart of her upon the road.

Peregrine not only reliſhed, but forthwith acted in conformity with this good counſel. His own horſes were committed to the charge of the landlord, with directions for Pipes, in caſe he ſhould come thither in queſt of his maſter; and a couple of ſtout geldings being prepared, he and his

his valet took the road again, ſteering their courſe according to the motions of the poſt-boy, who undertook to be their guide. They had almoſt finiſhed the firſt ſtage, when they deſcried a poſt-chaiſe juſt halting at the inn where they propoſed to change horſes; upon which, our adventurer, glowing with a moſt intereſting preſage, put his beaſt to the full ſpeed, and approached near enough to diſtinguiſh, (as the travellers quitted the carriage) that he had at laſt come up with the very individual perſons whom he had purſued ſo long.

Fluſhed with the diſcovery, he galloped into the yard ſo ſuddenly, that the lady and her conductor ſcarce had time to ſhut themſelves up in a chamber, to which they retreated with great precipitation; ſo that the purſuer was now certain of having houſed his prey. That he might, however, leave nothing to fortune, he placed himſelf upon the ſtair, by which they had aſcended to the apartment, and ſent up his compliments to the young lady, deſiring the favour of being admitted to her preſence, otherwiſe he ſhould be obliged to wave all ceremony, and take that liberty which ſhe would not give. The ſervant having conveyed this meſſage through the key-hole, returned with an anſwer, importing, that ſhe would adhere to the reſolution ſhe had taken, and periſh rather than comply with his will. Our adventurer, without ſtaying to make any rejoinder to this reply, ran up ſtairs, and thundering at the door for entrance, was given to underſtand by the nymph's attendant, that a blunderbuſs was ready primed for his reception, and that he would do well to ſpare him the neceſſity of ſhedding blood, in defence of a perſon who

had put herſelf under his protection. "All the laws of the land (ſaid he) cannot now untie the knots by which we are bound together; and therefore I will guard her as my own property; ſo that you had better deſiſt from your fruitleſs attempt, and thereby conſult your own ſafety: for, by the God that made me! I will diſcharge my piece upon you, as ſoon as you ſet your noſe within the door; and your blood be upon your own head." Theſe menaces from a citizen's clerk, would have been ſufficient motives for Pickle to ſtorm the breach, although they had not been reinforced by that declaration, which informed him of Emilia's having beſtowed herſelf in marriage upon ſuch a contemptible rival. This ſole conſideration added wings to his impetuoſity, and he applied his foot to the door with ſuch irreſiſtible force, as burſted it open in an inſtant, entering at the ſame time with a piſtol ready cock'd in his hand. His antagoniſt, inſtead of firing his blunderbuſs, when he ſaw him approach, ſtarted back, with evident ſigns of ſurprize and conſternation, exclaiming, "Lord Jeſus! Sir, you are not the man! and, without doubt, are under ſome miſtake with regard to us."

Before Peregrine had time to anſwer this ſalutation, the lady hearing it, advanced to him, and pulling off a maſk, diſcovered a face which he had never ſeen before. The Gorgon's head, according to the fables of antiquity, never had a more inſtantaneous or petrifying effect, than that which this countenance produced upon the aſtoniſhed youth. His eyes were fixed upon this unknown object, as if they had been attracted by the power of inchantment, his feet ſeemed rivetted to the ground, and after having ſtood motionleſs

tionleſs for the ſpace of a few minutes, he dropped down in an apoplexy of diſappointment and deſpair. The Swiſs, who had followed him, ſeeing his maſter in this condition, lifted him up, and laying him upon a bed in the next room, let him blood immediately, without heſitation, being always provided with a caſe of lancets, againſt all accidents on the road. To this foreſight our hero, in all probability, was indebted for his life. By virtue of a very copious evacuation, he recovered the uſe of his ſenſes; but the complication of fatigues, and violent tranſports which he had undergone, brewed up a dangerous fever in his blood; and a phyſician being called from the next market-town, ſeveral days elapſed before he would anſwer for his life.

CHAP. LXXXV.

Peregrine *ſends a meſſage to Mrs.* Gauntlet, *who rejects his propoſal. He repairs to the gariſon.*

AT length, however, his conſtitution overcame his diſeaſe, though not before it had in a great meaſure tamed the fury of his diſpoſition, and brought him to a ſerious conſideration of his conduct. In this humiliation of his ſpirits, he reflected with ſhame and remorſe upon his treachery to the fair, the innocent Emilia; he remembered his former ſentiments in her favour, as well as the injunctions of his dying uncle; he recollected his intimacy with her brother, againſt which he had ſo baſely ſinned; and revolving all the circumſtances of her conduct, found it ſo commendable, ſpirited, and noble, that he deemed her an object of ſufficient dignity to merit his ho-

nourable addreſſes, even though his duty had not been concerned in the deciſion: but, obligated as he was, to make reparation to a worthy family, which he had ſo groſly injured, he thought he could not manifeſt his reformation too ſoon; and, whenever he found himſelf able to hold the pen, wrote a letter to Mrs. Gauntlet, wherein he acknowledged, with many expreſſions of ſorrow and contrition, that he had acted a part altogether unbecoming a man of honour, and ſhould never enjoy the leaſt tranquillity of mind, until he ſhould have merited her forgiveneſs. He proteſted, that although his happineſs intirely depended upon the determination of Emilia, he would even renounce all hope of being bleſſed with her favour, if ſhe could point out any other method of making reparation to that amiable young lady, but by laying his heart and fortune at her feet, and ſubmitting himſelf to her pleaſure during the remaining part of his life. He conjured her, therefore, in the moſt pathetic manner, to pardon him, in conſideration of his ſincere repentance, and uſe her maternal influence with her daughter, ſo as that he might be permitted to wait upon her with a wedding-ring, as ſoon as his health would allow him to undertake the journey.

This explanation being diſpatched by Pipes, who had, by this time, found his maſter, the young gentleman inquired about the couple whom he had ſo unfortunately purſued, and underſtood from his valet de chambre, who learn'd the ſtory from their own mouths, that the lady was the only daughter of a rich Jew, and her attendant no other than his apprentice, who had converted her to chriſtianity, and married her at the ſame time;

time; that this ſecret having taken air, the old Iſraelite had contrived a ſcheme to ſeparate them for ever; and they being apprized of his intention, had found means to elope from his houſe, with a view of ſheltering themſelves in France, until the affair could be made up: that ſeeing three men ride after them with ſuch eagerneſs and ſpeed, they never doubted that the purſuers were her father, accompanied by ſome friends or domeſtics, and on that ſuppoſition had fled with the utmoſt diſpatch and trepidation, until they had found themſelves happily undeceived, at that very inſtant, when they expected nothing but miſchief and misfortune: and laſtly, the Swiſs gave him to underſtand, that after having profeſſed ſome concern for his deplorable ſituation, and enjoyed a ſlight refreſhment, they had taken their departure for Dover, and, in all likelihood, were ſafely arrived at Paris.

In four and twenty hours after Pipes was charged with his commiſſion, he brought back an anſwer from the mother of Emilia, couched in theſe words.

"SIR,

I Received the favour of yours, and am glad, for your own ſake, that you have attained a due ſenſe and conviction of your unkind and unchriſtian behaviour to poor Emy. I thank God, none of my children were ever ſo inſulted before. Give me leave to tell you, Sir, my daughter was no upſtart, without friends or education, but a young lady as well bred, and better born, than moſt private gentlewomen in the kingdom: and therefore, though you had no eſteem for her perſon, you ought to have paid ſome regard to her

family, which (no diſparagement to you, Sir) is more honourable than your own. As for your propoſal, Miſs Gauntlet will not hear of it, being, that ſhe thinks her honour will not allow her to liſten to any terms of reconciliation; and ſhe is not yet ſo deſtitute, as to embrace an offer to which ſhe has the leaſt objection. In the mean time, ſhe is ſo much indiſpoſed, that ſhe cannot poſſibly ſee company; ſo I beg you will not take the trouble of making a fruitleſs journey to this place. Perhaps your future conduct may deſerve her forgiveneſs; and really, as I am concerned for your happineſs, which (you aſſure me) depends upon her condeſcenſion, I wiſh with all my heart it may; and am (notwithſtanding all that has happened)

Your ſincere well-wiſher,

CECILIA GAUNTLET."

From this epiſtle, and the information of his meſſenger, our hero learn'd, that his miſtreſs had actually profited by his wild-gooſe-chace, ſo as to make a ſafe retreat to her mother's houſe; and, though ſorry to hear of her indiſpoſition, he was alſo piqued at her implacability, as well as at ſome ſtately paragraphs of the letter, in which (he thought) the good lady had conſulted her own vanity rather than her good ſenſe. Theſe motives of reſentment helped him to bear his diſappointment like a philoſopher, eſpecially as he had now quieted his conſcience, in proffering to redreſs the injury he had done; and, moreover, found himſelf, with regard to his love, in a calm ſtate of hope and reſignation.

A ſeaſonable fit of illneſs is an excellent medicine for the turbulence of paſſion. Such a reformation had the fever produced in the œconomy of his thoughts, that he moralized like an apoſtle, and projected ſeveral prudential ſchemes for his future conduct.

In the mean time, as ſoon as his health was ſufficiently re-eſtabliſhed, he took a trip to the gariſon, in order to viſit his friends; and learn'd from Hatchway's own mouth, that he had broke the ice of courtſhip to his aunt, and that his addreſſes were now fairly afloat; though when he firſt declared himſelf to the widow, after ſhe had been duly prepared for the occaſion, by her niece and the reſt of her friends, ſhe had received his propoſal with a becoming reſerve, and piouſly wept at the remembrance of her huſband, obſerving, that ſhe ſhould never meet with his fellow.

Peregrine promoted the lieutenant's ſuit with all his influence; and all Mrs. Trunnion's objections to the match being ſurmounted, it was determined, that the day of marriage ſhould be put off for three months, that her reputation might not ſuffer by a precipitate engagement. His next care was to give orders for erecting a plain marble monument to the memory of his uncle, on which the following inſcription, compoſed by the bridegroom, actually appeared in golden letters.

Here

Here lies,
Foundered in a fathom and an half,
The Shell
Of
HAWSER TRUNNION, Eſq;
Formerly commander of a ſquadron
In his Majeſty's ſervice,
Who broach'd to, at five P. M. Octr. X^.
In the year of his age
Threeſcore and nineteen.

He kept his guns always loaded,
And his tackle ready manned,
And never ſhewed his poop to the enemy,
Except when he took her in tow;
But, his ſhot being expended,
His match burnt out,
And his upper works decayed,
He was ſunk
By death's ſuperior weight of metal.
Nevertheleſs,
He will be weighed again
At the Great Day,
His rigging refitted,
And his timbers repaired,
And, with one broad-ſide,
Make his adverſary
Strike in his turn.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXXXVI.

He returns to London, *and meets with* Cadwallader, *who entertains him with a curious dialogue.*

THE young gentleman having performed theſe laſt offices, in honour of his deceaſed benefactor, and preſented Mr. Jolter to the long-expected living, which at this time happened to be vacant, returned to London, and reſumed his former gaiety: not that he was able to ſhake Emilia from his thoughts, or even to remember her without violent emotions; for, as he recovered his vigour, his former impatience recurred, and therefore he reſolved to plunge himſelf headlong into ſome intrigue, that might engage his paſſions, and amuſe his imagination.

A man of his accompliſhments could not fail to meet with a variety of ſubjects, on which his gallantry would have been properly exerciſed; and this abundance diſtracted his choice, which at any time was apt to be influenced by caprice and whim. I have already obſerved, that he had lifted his view, through a matrimonial perſpective, as high as a lady of the firſt quality and diſtinction; and now, that he was refuſed by Miſs Gauntlet, and enjoyed a little reſpite from the agonies of that flame which her charms had kindled in his heart, he renewed his aſſiduities to her grace; and, though he durſt not yet riſk an explanation, enjoyed the pleaſure of ſeeing himſelf ſo well received in quality of a particular acquaintance, that he flattered himſelf with the belief of his having made ſome progreſs in her heart;

heart; and was confirmed in this conceited notion, by the aſſurances of her woman, whom, by liberal largeſſes, he retained in his intereſt, becauſe ſhe found means to perſuade him, that ſhe was in the confidence of her lady. But, notwithſtanding this encouragement, and the ſanguine ſuggeſtions of his own vanity, he dreaded the thoughts of expoſing himſelf to her ridicule and reſentment, by a premature declaration, and determined to poſtpone his addreſſes, until he ſhould be more certified of the probability of ſucceeding in his attempt.

While he remained in this heſitation and ſuſpence, he was one morning very agreeably ſurprized with the appearance of his friend Crabtree, who, by the permiſſion of Pipes, to whom he was well known, entered his chamber before he was awake, and, by a violent ſhake of the ſhoulder, diſengaged him from the arms of ſleep. The firſt compliments having mutually paſſed, Cadwallader gave him to underſtand, that he had arrived in town over-night in the ſtage-coach from Bath, and entertained him with ſuch a ludicrous account of his fellow-travellers, that Peregrine, for the firſt time ſince their parting, indulged himſelf in mirth, even to the hazard of ſuffocation.

This relation was confined to a curious dialogue that paſſed betwixt a woollen-draper and his wife, who were his only companions during the beſt part of the journey. The lady laboured under a Diabetes, in conſequence of having uſed the waters injudiciouſly for another complaint; and, that ſhe might not be an impediment to the carriage, by ordering it to halt, as often as ſhe ſhould have occaſion to diſembogue, ſhe had provided

vided herſelf with a leathern convenience, which her huſband carried in the pocket of his great coat, conveying it privately to her, when ſhe found herſelf neceſſitated to uſe it; and afterwards, taking the opportunity to empty it out at the window, when the Miſanthrope's head chanced to be turned another way.

As this couple embarked with Crabtree, in the full perſuaſion of his being utterly bereft of the ſenſe of hearing, they kept no ſort of reſerve in their converſation; and at laſt fairly quarrelled, on account of the good man's want of alertneſs, in handing the commodity, when his help-mate's occaſions were ſo extremely preſſing, that her flood-gates gave way, before ſhe was prepared for the irruption. Smarting with this diſagreeable circumſtance, "Odds plague! you nincompoop, (cried ſhe) you have fumbled ſo long about the pot, that I have drenched myſelf all over. I wiſh to God you had received the ſtream in your mouth." "I thank you for your good-will, my dear, (anſwered the patient huſband) you would promote me to the honour of being a piſſing-poſt." "I'm ſure, (retorted his yoke-fellow, ſnatching the utenſil from his hand) you are fit for no other poſt; and, accordingly, ſuffer yourſelf to be piſs'd upon by every body. Witneſs your pitiful behaviour at the E. O. table, when that officer bullied you out of twenty guineas, which you wan't obliged to pay." "There you happen to be wide of the matter, (ſaid the draper) the whole company gave it againſt me, as a fair bett; beſides, the captain threatened to cut my throat, and I did not chooſe to give him that trouble." "Cut your throat! (exclaimed the virago) I would a durſt; you had a good action againſt him for

for putting you in fear of your life. But you are a poor tool, good for nothing but ſquandering away my money. If you had poſſeſſed ſpirit enough to follow my advice, you might have been a deputy of the ward, by this time. But, all your care is to ſit among your companions of the garden, and ſing bunting-ſongs, till you get drunk, leaving your trade at ſixes and ſevens, and your family to go to the dogs."

The huſband (pacific as he was) being nettled at theſe inſinuations, frankly told her, that his affairs had never proſpered, ſince ſhe had perſuaded him to ſwear a book-debt againſt a gentleman's executor, after he had been paid by the deceaſed. Upon which, her eyes lightened with fury, and ſhe called him a mean-ſpirited ſorry fellow, for upbraiding her, a weak woman, with what ſhe had done for his own good. "Sirrah, (ſaid ſhe) I ſuppoſe you would be baſe enough to turn evidence againſt me, if you thought you could get any thing by the information, though that was the only thing you ever did for your poor family. Who is to provide for my children, if their father don't?" "And I wiſh from my heart their father would provide for them," (ſaid the huſband, irritated by the epithets ſhe had uttered.) "An't you their father, Mr. Wiſeacre, (cried the aggreſſor:) Ha'n't I brought you five as fine babes as any in the pariſh?" "Yes, yes, (replied the other) you have brought me ſeveral very fine children, that muſt be allowed; but, whether or not they are of my begetting, is a queſtion that I am not quite ſo clear about." "How, fellor! (replied the wife) do you doubt my vartue?" "No, not I, (anſwered the ſhopkeeper) I have no doubts about the matter. It

It is a long time ſince ſurgeon C—— aſſured me, that he would ſuckle upon his thumb all the children I ſhould ever beget; and I have other convincing reaſons to ſupport his opinion."

Theſe laſt words had ſcarce proceeded from his mouth, when his ſweet-blooded ſpouſe, leaving her duty and obedience on the left hand, and forgetting that ſhe was ſubject to the eye of any unconcerned ſpectator, lifted up the machine ſhe had juſt repleniſhed, and made ſuch application with it to the forehead of her huſband, as preſſed the two ſides of it together, by which means, the contents were ſquirted out in a full ſtream, that played upon the viſage of the aſtoniſhed Miſanthrope; and, not ſatisfied with the vengeance ſhe had taken, ſhe quitted her weapon, and aſſaulted him with tooth and nail, exclaiming all the time, "Ah! you pitiful cuckoldy ſcrub, have you the impudence to own to my face, that you married a woman of my character, when you knew your own infirmities? You had a baſe deſign upon my fortune, you ſlave, although you was ſenſible that you could never deſerve it. But, I'll be revenged of you, if there be a man to be had for love or money."

Thus, far from attempting to clear herſelf from the imputation implied in her huſband's words, ſhe conſtrued his declaration into an acknowledgment of the ill uſage ſhe had ſuffered; and while ſhe trumpeted her own wrongs, with great vociferation, exerciſed her claws with ſuch rancour and agility, that the poor draper was fain to roar aloud for aſſiſtance; and as Cadwallader had no inclination to interpoſe, he would, in all probability, have met with the fate of Orpheus, had not his cries reached the ears of the coach-

coachman, who deſcended from his box, and partly by threats, and partly by intreaties, put an end to her operations.

CHAP. LXXXVII.

Crabtree *ſounds the ducheſs, and undeceives* Pickle, *who, by an extraordinary accident, becomes acquainted with another lady of quality.*

CRabtree having rehearſed this adventure, in ſuch a peculiarity of manner, as added infinite ridicule to every circumſtance, and repeated every ſcandalous report which had circulated at the Bath, after Peregrine's departure, was informed by the youth, that he harboured a deſign upon the perſon of ſuch a ducheſs, and in all appearance had no reaſon to complain of his reception; but, that he would not venture to declare himſelf, until he ſhould be more aſcertained of her ſentiments: and therefore, he begg'd leave to depend upon the intelligence of his friend Cadwallader, who, he knew, was admitted to her parties.

The Miſanthrope, before he would promiſe his aſſiſtance, aſked if his proſpect verged towards matrimony? and our adventurer (who gueſſed the meaning of his queſtion) replying in the negative, he undertook the office of reconnoitring her inclination, proteſting at the ſame time, that he would never concern himſelf in any ſcheme, that did not tend to the diſgrace and deception of all the ſex. On theſe conditions, he eſpouſed the intereſt of our hero, and a plan was immediately concerted, in conſequence of which they met by accident at her grace's table; and Pickle having

having ſtayed all the fore-part of the evening, and ſat out all the company, except the Miſanthrope and a certain widow-lady, who was ſaid to be in the ſecrets of my lady ducheſs, went away, on pretence of an indiſpenſible engagement, that Crabtree might have a proper opportunity of making him the ſubject of converſation.

Accordingly, he had ſcarce quitted the apartment, when this Cynic attending him to the door, with a look of moroſe diſdain, "Were I an abſolute prince, (ſaid he) and that fellow one of my ſubjects, I would order him to be cloath'd in ſack-cloth, and he ſhould drive my aſſes to water, that his lofty ſpirit might be lowered to the level of his deſerts. The pride of a peacock is downright ſelf-denial, when compared with the vanity of that coxcomb, which was naturally arrogant, but is now rendered altogether intolerable, by the reputation he acquired at Bath, for kicking a bully, outwitting a club of raw harpers, and divers other pranks, in the execution of which he was more lucky than wiſe. But nothing has contributed ſo much to the increaſe of his inſolence and ſelf-conceit, as the favour he found among the ladies. Ay, the ladies, Madam, I care not who knows it: the ladies, who (to their honour be it ſpoken) never fail to patronize foppery and folly, provided they ſolicit their encouragement. And yet, this dog was not on the footing of thoſe hermaphroditical animals, who may be reckoned among the number of waiting-women, who air your ſhifts, comb your lap-dogs, examine your noſes with magnifying glaſſes, in order to ſqueeze out the worms, clean your teeth-bruſhes, ſweeten your handkerchiefs, and

and ſoften waſte paper for your occaſions. This fellow Pickle was entertained for more important purpoſes; his turn of duty never came till all thoſe lapwings were gone to rooſt; then he ſcaled windows, leaped over garden-walls, and was let in by Mrs. Betty, in the dark. Nay, the magiſtrates of Bath complimented him with the freedom of the corporation, merely becauſe, through his means, the waters had gained extraordinary credit; for every female of a tolerable appearance, that went thither on account of her ſterility, got the better of her complaint, during his reſidence at the Bath: and now, the fellow thinks no woman can withſtand his addreſſes. He had not been here three minutes, when I could perceive with half an eye, that he had marked out your grace for a conqueſt; I mean in an honourable way; though the raſcal has impudence enough to attempt any thing." So ſaying, he fixed his eyes upon the ducheſs, who (while her face glowed with indignation) turning to her confidant, expreſſed herſelf in theſe words: "Upon my life! I believe there is actually ſome truth in what this old ruffian ſays; I have myſelf obſerved that young fellow eying me with a very particular ſtare." "It is not to be at all wondered at, (ſaid her friend) that a youth of his complexion ſhould be ſenſible to the charms of your grace; but I dare ſay, he would not preſume to entertain any, but the moſt honourable and reſpectful ſentiments." "Reſpectful ſentiments! (cried my lady, with a look of ineffable diſdain) if I thought the fellow had aſſurance enough to think of me in any ſhape, I proteſt I would forbid him my houſe. Upon my honour, ſuch inſtances of audacity ſhould induce perſons

of quality to keep your ſmall gentry at a greater diſtance; for they are very apt to grow impudent, upon the leaſt countenance or encouragement."

Cadwallader, ſatisfied with this declaration, changed the ſubject of diſcourſe, and next day communicated his diſcovery to his friend Pickle, who, upon this occaſion, felt the moſt ſtinging ſenſations of mortifying pride, and reſolved to quit his proſpect with a good grace. Nor did the execution of this ſelf-denying ſcheme coſt him one moment's uneaſineſs; for his heart had never been intereſted in the purſuit, and his vanity triumphed in the thoughts of manifeſting his indifference. Accordingly, the very next time he viſited her grace, his behaviour was remarkably frank, ſprightly, and diſengaged; and the ſubject of love being artfully introduced by the widow, who had been directed to ſound his inclinations, he rallied the paſſion with great eaſe and ſeverity, and made no ſcruple of declaring himſelf heart-whole.

Though the ducheſs had reſented his ſuppoſed affection, ſhe was now offended at his inſenſibility, and even ſignified her diſguſt, by obſerving, that perhaps his attention to his own qualifications ſcreened him from the impreſſion of all other objects.

While he enjoyed this ſarcaſm, the meaning of which he could plainly diſcern, the company was joined by a certain virtuoſo, who had gained free acceſs to all the great families of the land, by his notable talent of goſſipping and buffoonery. He was now in the ſeventy-fifth year of his age; his birth was ſo obſcure, that he ſcarce knew his father's name, his education ſuitable to the dig-

nity

nity of his deſcent, his character publickly branded with homicide, profligacy, and breach of truſt; yet this man, by the happy inheritance of impregnable effrontery, and a lucky proſtitution of all principle, in rendering himſelf ſubſervient to the appetites of the great, had attained to an independency of fortune, as well as to ſuch a particular ſhare of favour among the quality, that although he was well known to have pimped for three generations of the nobility, there was not a lady of faſhion in the kingdom, who ſcrupled to admit him to her toilette, or even to be ſquired by him, in any public place of entertainment. Not but that this ſage was occaſionally uſeful to his fellow-creatures, by theſe connexions with people of fortune; for, he often undertook to ſolicite charity in behalf of diſtreſſed objects, with a view of embezzling one half of the benefactions. It was an errand of this kind that now brought him to the houſe of her grace.

After having ſat a few minutes, he told the company, that he would favour them with a very proper opportunity to extend their benevolence, for the relief of a poor gentlewoman, who was reduced to the moſt abject miſery, by the death of her huſband, and juſt delivered of a couple of fine boys. They, moreover, underſtood from his information, that this object was daughter of a good family, who had renounced her, in conſequence of her marrying an enſign without a fortune; and even obſtructed his promotion with all their influence and power; a circumſtance of barbarity, which had made ſuch an impreſſion upon his mind, as diſordered his brain, and drove him to deſpair, in a fit of which he had made away

away with himſelf, leaving his wife then big with child, to all the horrors of indigence and grief.

Various were the criticiſms on this pathetic picture, which the old man drew with great expreſſion. My lady ducheſs concluded, that ſhe muſt be a creature void of all feeling and reflection, who could ſurvive ſuch aggravated miſery; therefore, did not deſerve to be relieved, except in the character of a common beggar; and was generous enough to offer a recommendation, by which ſhe would be admitted into an infirmary, to which her grace was a ſubſcriber; at the ſame time, adviſing the ſollicitor to ſend the twins to the Foundling-hoſpital, where they would be carefully nurſed and brought up, ſo as to become uſeful members of the commonwealth. Another lady, with all due deference to the opinion of the ducheſs, was free enough to blame the generoſity of her grace, which would only ſerve to encourage children in their diſobedience to their parents, and might be the means not only of prolonging the diſtreſs of the wretched creature, but alſo of ruining the conſtitution of ſome young heir, perhaps the hope of a great family; for, ſhe did ſuppoſe that madam, when her month ſhould be up, and her brats diſpoſed of, would ſpread her attractions to the public, (provided ſhe could profit by her perſon) and, in the uſual way, make a regular progreſs from St. James's to Drury-lane. She apprehended, for theſe reaſons, that their compaſſion would be moſt effectually ſhewn, in leaving her to periſh in her preſent neceſſity; and that the old gentleman would be unpardonable, ſhould he perſiſt in his endeavours to relieve her. A third member of this tender-hearted ſociety, after having aſked if the

young woman was handſome? and been an ſwered in the negative, allowed, that there wa a great deal of reaſon in what had been ſai by the honourable perſon who had ſpoke laſt neverthelefs, ſhe humbly conceived, her ſentenc would admit of ſome mitigation. "Let th bantlings (ſaid ſhe) be ſent to the hoſpital, ac cording to the advice of her grace, and a ſma collection be made for the preſent ſupport of th mother; and when her health is recovered, will take her into my family, in quality of a upper-ſervant, or medium between me and m woman; for, upon my life! I can't endure t chide, or give directions to a creature, who i in point of birth and education, but one degr above the vulgar."

This propoſal met with univerſal approbatio The ducheſs (to her immortal honour) beg the contribution with a crown; ſo that the re of the company were obliged to reſtrict their l berality to half the ſum, that her grace might n be affronted; and the propoſer demanding th poor woman's name and place of abode, the o mediator could not help giving her ladyſhip verbal direction, though he was extremely mo tified (on more accounts than one) to find ſuc an iſſue to his ſolicitation.

Peregrine, who, *though humorous as winte had a tear for pity, and an hand open as da for melting charity*, was ſhocked at the nature an reſult of this ungenerous conſultation. He co tributed his half-crown, however; and retiri from the company, betook himſelf to the lodgin of the forlorn lady in the ſtraw, according to th direction he had heard. Upon inquiry, he un derſtood, that ſhe was then viſited by ſome ch

ritab

ritable gentlewoman, who had ſent for a nurſe, and waited the return of the meſſenger; and he ſent up his reſpects, deſiring he might be permitted to ſee her, on pretence of having been intimate with her late huſband.

Though the poor woman had never heard of his name, ſhe did not think proper to deny his requeſt; and he was conducted to a paultry chamber in the third ſtory, where he found this unhappy widow ſitting up in a truckle-bed, and ſuckling one of her infants, with the moſt piteous expreſſion of anguiſh in her features, which were naturally regular and ſweet, while the other was fondled on the knee of a perſon, whoſe attention was ſo much ingroſſed by her little charge, that for the preſent ſhe could mind nothing elſe: and it was not till after the firſt compliments paſſed betwixt the hapleſs mother and our adventurer, that he perceived the ſtranger's countenance, which inſpired him with the higheſt eſteem and admiration. He beheld all the graces of elegance and beauty, breathing ſentiment and beneficence, and ſoftened into the moſt inchanting tenderneſs of weeping ſympathy: and when he declared the cauſe of his viſit, which was no other than the deſire of befriending the diſtreſſed lady, to whom he preſented a bank-note for twenty pounds, he was favoured with ſuch a look of complacency by this amiable phantom, who might have been juſtly taken for an angel miniſtering to the neceſſities of mortals, that his whole ſoul was tranſported with love and veneration. Nor was this prepoſſeſſion diminiſhed by the information of the widow, who, after having manifeſted her gratitude in a flood of tears, told him, that the unknown object of his eſteem was

a perſon of honour, who having heard by acci-
dent of her deplorable ſituation, had immediate
obeyed the dictates of her humanity, and com
in perſon to relieve her diſtreſs; that ſhe had no
only generouſly ſupplied her with money for pre-
ſent ſuſtenance, but alſo undertaken to provide
nurſe for her babes, and even promiſed to favour he
with protection, ſhould ſhe ſurvive her preſent me
lancholy ſituation. To theſe articles of intelli-
gence ſhe added, that the name of her benefactre
was the celebrated lady ——, to whoſe characte
the youth was no ſtranger, though he had neve
ſeen her perſon before. The killing edge of he
charms was a little blunted by the accidents o
time and fortune; but no man of taſte and ima
gination, whoſe nerves were not quite chille
with the froſt of age, could, even at that time
look upon her with impunity: and as Peregrin
ſaw her attractions heightened by the tender o
fice in which ſhe was engaged, he was ſmitte
with her beauty, and ſo raviſhed with her com
paſſion, that he could not ſuppreſs his emotion
but applauded her benevolence with all the warm
of enthuſiaſm.

Her ladyſhip received his compliments wi
great politeneſs and affability; and the occaſio
on which they met being equally intereſting t
both, an acquaintance commenced between them
and they concerted meaſures for the benefit
the widow and her two children, one of whom
our hero beſpoke for his own godſon; for Pickl
was not ſo obſcure in the beau monde, but that h
fame had reached the ears of this lady, wh
therefore, did not diſcourage his advances towar
her friendſhip and eſteem.

All the particulars relating to their charge being djuſted, he attended her ladyſhip to her own ouſe; and, by her converſation, had the plea- ure of finding her underſtanding ſuitable to her ther accompliſhments. Nor had ſhe any reaſon o think, that our hero's qualifications had been xaggerated by common report.

One of their adopted children died before it was aptized; ſo that their care concentered in the ther, for whom they ſtood ſponſors; and un- erſtanding that the old agent was become trou- eſome in his viſits to the mother, to whom he ow began to adminiſter ſuch counſel as ſhocked e delicacy of her virtue, they removed her into nother lodging, where ſhe would not be ex- oſed to his machinations; and in leſs than a onth, our hero learn'd from a nobleman of his quaintance, that the hoary pandar had actually gaged to procure for him, this poor afflicted ntlewoman; and being fruſtrated in his inten- on, ſubſtituted in her room a nymph from the rlieus of Covent-garden, that made his lord- ip ſmart ſeverely for the favours ſhe beſtowed.

Mean while, Peregrine cultivated his new ac- aintance with all his art and aſſiduity, pre- ming, from the circumſtance of her reputation d fate, as well as on the ſtrength of his own erit, that, in time, he ſhould be able to indulge at paſſion which had begun to glow within his eaſt.

As her ladyſhip had undergone a vaſt variety of rtune and adventure, which he had heard in- ſtinctly related, with numberleſs errors and miſ- preſentations, he was no ſooner intitled, by e familiarity of communication, to aſk ſuch a vour, than he earneſtly intreated her to enter-

tain him with the particulars of her ſtory; and, by dint of importunity, ſhe was at length prevailed upon (in a ſelect partie) to gratify his curioſity in theſe words.

CHAP. LXXXVIII.

The memoirs of a lady of quality.

BY the circumſtances of the ſtory which I am going to relate, you will be convinced of my candour, while you are informed of my indiſcretion; and be enabled, I hope, to perceive, that howſoever my head may have erred, my heart hath always been uncorrupted, and that I have been unhappy, *becauſe I loved, and was a woman.*

I believe I need not obſerve, that I was the only child of a man of good fortune, who indulged me, in my infancy, with all the tenderneſs of paternal affection; and when I was ſix years old, ſent me to a private ſchool, where I ſtayed till my age was doubled, and became ſuch a favourite, that I was (even in thoſe early days) carried to all the places of public diverſion, the court itſelf not excepted; an indulgence that flattered my love of pleaſure, to which I was naturally addicted, and encouraged thoſe ideas of vanity and ambition, which ſpring up ſo early in the human mind.

I was lively and good-natured, my imagination apt to run riot, my heart liberal and diſintereſted; though I was ſo obſtinately attached to my own opinions, that I could not well brook contradiction; and in the whole of my diſpoſition, reſemble

ſembled that of Henry the fifth, as deſcribed by Shakeſpear.

In my thirteenth year I went to Bath, where I was firſt introduced into the world as a woman, having been intitled to that privilege by my perſon, which was remarkably tall for my years; and there my fancy was quite captivated by the variety of diverſions in which I was continually engaged: not that the parties were altogether new to me, but becauſe I now found myſelf conſidered as a perſon of conſequence, and ſurrounded by a croud of admirers, who courted my acquaintance, and fed my vanity with praiſe and adulation. In ſhort, whether or not I deſerved their encomiums, I leave the world to judge; but my perſon was commended, and my talent in dancing met with univerſal applauſe. No wonder then, that every thing appeared joyous to a young creature, who was ſo void of experience and diſſimulation, that ſhe believed every body's heart as ſincere as her own, and every object ſuch as it appeared to be.

Among the ſwains who ſighed, or pretended to ſigh for me, were two that bore a pretty equal ſhare of my favour; (it was too ſuperficial to deſerve the name of love.) One of theſe was a forward youth of ſixteen, extremely handſome, lively, and impudent, who attended in quality of page upon the princeſs Amelia, who ſpent that ſeaſon at the Bath; the other was a Scotch nobleman turned of thirty, who was graced with a red ribbon, and danced particularly well, two qualifications of great weight with a girl of my age, whoſe heart was not deeply intereſted in the cauſe. Nevertheleſs, the page prevailed over this formidable rival; though our amour went

no farther than a little flirting, and ceaſed intirely when I left the place.

Next year, however, I reviſited this agreeable ſcene, and paſſed my time in the ſame circle of amuſements; in which, indeed, each ſeaſon at Bath is exactly reſembled by that which ſucceeds, allowing for the difference of company, which is continually varying. There I met with the ſame incenſe, and again had my favourite, who was a North Briton, and captain of foot, near forty years of age, and a little lame, an impediment which I did not diſcover, until it was pointed out by ſome of my companions, who rallied me upon my choice. He was always chearful, and very amorous, had a good countenance and an excellent underſtanding, poſſeſſed a great deal of art, and would have perſuaded me to marry him, had I not been reſtrained by the authority of my father, whoſe conſent was not to be obtained in favour of a man of his fortune.

At the ſame time, many propoſals of marriage were made to my parents; but, as they came from people whom I did not like, I rejected them all, being determined to refuſe every man who did not make his addreſſes to myſelf in perſon, becauſe I had no notion of marrying for any thing but love.

Among theſe formal propoſers was a Scottiſh earl, whoſe pretenſions were broke off by ſome difference about ſettlements; and the ſon of an Engliſh baron, with whom my father was in treaty, when he carried me to town, on a viſit to a young lady, with whom I had been intimate from my infancy. She was juſt delivered of her firſt ſon, for whom we ſtood ſponſors; ſo that this occaſion detained us a whole month, during which,

which, I went to a ball at court on the queen's birth-day, and there, for the firſt time, felt what love and beauty were.

The ſecond ſon of duke ———, who had juſt returned from his travels, was dancing with the princeſs royal, when a young lady came and deſired me to go and ſee a ſtranger, whom all the world admired: upon which, I followed her into the circle, and obſerved this object of admiration. He was dreſſed in a coat of white cloth, faced with blue ſattin embroidered with ſilver, of the ſame piece with his waiſtcoat; his fine hair hung down his back in ringlets below his waiſt, and his hat was laced with ſilver, and garniſhed with a white feather; but his perſon beggared all deſcription. He was tall and graceful, neither corpulent nor meagre, his limbs finely proportioned, his countenance open and majeſtic, his eyes full of ſweetneſs and vivacity, his teeth regular, and his pouting lips of the complexion of the damaſk roſe. In ſhort, he was formed for love, and inſpired it wherever he appeared; nor was he a niggard of his talents, but liberally returned it; at leaſt what paſſed for ſuch: for he had a flow of gallantry, for which many ladies of this land can vouch from their own experience: but he exclaimed againſt marriage, becauſe he had, as yet, met with no woman, to whoſe charms he would ſurrender his liberty, though a princeſs of France, and a lady of the ſame rank in ———, were ſaid to be, at that time, enamoured of his perſon.

I went home, totally ingroſſed by his idea, flattering myſelf, that he had obſerved me with ſome attention; for I was young and new, and

had the good fortune to attract the notice and approbation of the queen herſelf.

Next day, being at the opera, I was agreeably ſurpriſed with the appearance of this amiable ſtranger, who no ſooner ſaw me enter, than he approached ſo near to the place where I ſat, that I overheard what he ſaid to his companions; and was ſo happy as to find myſelf the ſubject of his diſcourſe, which abounded with rapturous expreſſions of love and admiration.

I could not liſten to theſe tranſports without emotion; my colour changed, my heart throbbed with unuſual violence, and mine eyes betrayed my inclinations in ſundry favourable glances, which he ſeemed to interpret aright, though he could not then avail himſelf of his ſucceſs, ſo far as to communicate his ſentiments by ſpeech, becauſe we were ſtrangers to each other.

I paſſed that night in the moſt anxious ſuſpence, and ſeveral days elapſed, before I ſaw him again. At length, however, being at court on a ball-night, and determined againſt dancing, I perceived him among the croud, and, to my unſpeakable joy, ſaw him advance with my lord P——, who introduced him to my acquaintance. He ſoon found means to alter my reſolution; and I condeſcended to be his partner all the evening; during which, he declared his paſſion in the moſt tender and perſuaſive terms that real love could dictate, or fruitful imagination invent.

I believed his proteſtations, becauſe I wiſhed them true, and was an unexperienced girl of fifteen. I complied with his earneſt requeſt of being permitted to viſit me, and even invited him to breakfaſt next morning; ſo that you may imagine (I ſpeak to thoſe that feel) I did not, that

that night, enjoy much repoſe. Such was the hurry and flutter of my ſpirits, that I roſe at ſix to receive him at ten. I dreſſed myſelf in a new pink ſattin-gown and my beſt laced night-cloaths, and was ſo animated by the occaſion, that if ever I deſerved a compliment upon my looks, it was my due at this meeting.

The wiſhed-for moment came, that brought my lover to my view: I was overwhelmed with joy, modeſty, and fear of I knew not what. We ſat down to breakfaſt, but did not eat. He renewed his addreſſes with irreſiſtible eloquence, and preſſed me to accept of his hand, without farther heſitation: but, to ſuch a precipitate ſtep, I objected, as a meaſure repugnant to decency, as well as to that duty which I owed to my father, whom I tenderly loved.

Though I withſtood this premature propoſal, I did not attempt to diſguiſe the ſituation of my thoughts; and thus commenced a tender correſpondence, which was maintained by letters while I remained in the country, and carried on (when I was in town) by private interviews, twice or thrice a week, at the houſe of my milliner, where ſuch endearments paſſed as refined and happy lovers know, and others can only gueſs. Truth and innocence prevailed on my ſide, while his heart was fraught with ſincerity and love. Such frequent intercourſe created an intimacy which I began to think dangerous, and therefore yielded to his repeated deſire, that we might be united for ever: nay, I reſolved to avoid him, until the day ſhould be fixed, and very innocently (though not very wiſely) told him my reaſon for this determination, which was no other than a conſciouſneſs of my incapacity to refuſe him

any thing he ſhould demand as a teſtimony of my love.

The time was accordingly appointed, at the diſtance of a few days, during which I intended to have implored my father's conſent, though I had but faint hopes of obtaining it: but, he was by ſome means or other apprized of our deſign, before I could prevail upon myſelf to make him acquainted with our purpoſe. I had danced with my lover at the Ridotto on the preceding evening, and there, perhaps, our eyes betrayed us. Certain it is, ſeveral of lord W——m's relations, who diſapproved of the match, came up and rallied him on his paſſion; lord S——k in particular, uſed this remarkable expreſſion, "Nephew, "as much love as you pleaſe, but no matri- "mony."

Next day, the prieſt being prepared, and the bridegroom waiting for me at the appointed place, in all the tranſports of impatient expectation, I was, without any previous warning, carried into the country by my father, who took no notice of the intelligence he had received, but decoyed me into the coach, on pretence of taking the air; and when we had proceeded as far as Turnham-green, gave me to underſtand, that he would dine in that place.

There was no remedy: I was obliged to bear my diſappointment, though with an aching heart, and followed him up ſtairs into an apartment, where he told me he was minutely informed of my matrimonial ſcheme. I did not attempt to diſguiſe the truth, but aſſured him, while the tears guſhed from my eyes, that my want of courage alone had hindered me from making him privy to my paſſion; though I owned, I ſhould have

have married lord W——m, even though he had diſapproved of my choice. I reminded him of the uneaſy life I led at home, and frankly acknowledged, that I loved my admirer too well to live without him; though if he wou'd favour me with his conſent, I would defer my intention, and punctually obſerve any day he ſhould fix for our nuptials. Mean while, I begged he would permit me to ſend a meſſage to lord W——m, who was waiting in expectation of my coming, and might (without ſuch notice) imagine I was playing the jilt. He granted this laſt requeſt; in conſequence of which, I ſent a letter to my lover, who, when he received it, had almoſt fainted away, believing that I ſhould be locked up in the country, and ſnatched for ever from his arms. Tortured with theſe apprehenſions, he changed cloaths immediately, and taking horſe, reſolved to follow me whitherſoever we ſhould go.

After dinner, we proceeded as far as Brentford, where we lay, intending to be at my father's country-houſe next night; and my admirer putting up at the ſame inn, practiſed every expedient his invention could ſuggeſt, to procure an interview; but all his endeavours were unſucceſsful, becauſe I, who little dream'd of his being ſo near, had gone to bed upon our firſt arrival, overwhelmed with affliction and tears.

In the morning I threw myſelf at my father's feet, and conjured him by all the ties of paternal affection, to indulge me with an opportunity of ſeeing my admirer once more, before I ſhould be conveyed from his wiſhes. The melancholy condition in which I preferred this ſupplication, melted the tender heart of my parent, who yielded

to my ſolicitation, and carried me back to town, for that purpoſe.

Lord W——m, who had watched our motions, and arrived at his own lodgings, before we alighted at my father's houſe, obeyed my ſummons on the inſtant, and appeared before me like an angel. Our faculties were, for ſome minutes, ſuſpended by a conflict of grief and joy. At length, I recovered the uſe of ſpeech, and gave him to underſtand, that I was come to town, in order to take my leave of him, by the permiſſion of my father, whom I had promiſed to attend into the country next day, before he would conſent to my return; the chief cauſe and pretence of which, was my earneſt deſire to convince him, that I was not to blame for the diſappointment he had ſuffered, and that I ſhould ſee him again in a month, when the nuptial knot ſhould be tied in ſpite of all oppoſition.

My lover, who was better acquainted with the world, had well nigh run diſtracted with this information. He ſwore he would not leave me, until I ſhould promiſe to meet and marry him next day; or, if I refuſed to grant that requeſt, he would immediately leave the kingdom, to which he would never more return; and before his departure, ſacrifice lord H— B—, ſon to the duke of S. A——, who was the only perſon upon earth who could have betrayed us to my father, becauſe he alone was truſted with the ſecret of our intended marriage, and had actually undertaken to give me away; an office which he afterwards declined. Lord W——m alſo affirmed, that my father decoyed me into the country, with a view of cooping me up, and ſequeſtering me intirely from his view and correſpondence.

In

In vain I pleaded my father's well-known tenderneſs, and uſed all the arguments I could recollect to divert him from his revenge upon lord H——. He was deaf to all my repreſentations, and nothing, I found, would prevail upon him to ſuppreſs his reſentment, but a poſitive promiſe to comply with his former deſire. I told him, I would hazard every thing to make him happy; but could not, with any regard to my duty, take ſuch a ſtep, without the knowledge of my parent; or, if I were ſo inclined, it would be impracticable to elude his vigilance and ſuſpicion. However, he employed ſuch pathetic remonſtrances, and retained ſuch a powerful advocate within my own breaſt, that before we parted, I aſſured him, my whole power ſhould be exerted for his ſatisfaction; and he ſignified his reſolution of ſitting up all night, in expectation of ſeeing me at his lodgings.

He had no ſooner retired, than I went into the next room, and deſired my father to fix a day for the marriage; in which caſe, I would chearfully wait upon him into the country; whereas, ſhould he deny my requeſt, on pretence of ſtaying for the conſent of my lover's relations, which was very uncertain, I would ſeize the firſt opportunity of marrying lord W——m, coſt what it would. He conſented to the match, but would not appoint a day for the ceremony, which he propoſed to defer until all parties ſhould be agreed; and ſuch a favourable criſis, I feared, would never happen.

I therefore reſolved within myſelf to gratify my lover's expectation, by eloping, if poſſible, that very night; though the execution of this plan was extremely difficult, becauſe my father

was

was upon the alarm, and my own maid, who was my bedfellow, altogether in his intereſt. Notwithſtanding theſe conſiderations, I found means to engage one of the houſe-maids in my behalf, who beſpoke an hackney-coach, to be kept in waiting all night; and to bed I went with my Abigail, whom (as I had not cloſed an eye) I waked about five in the morning, and ſent to pack up ſome things for our intended journey.

While ſhe was thus employed, I got up, and huddled on my cloaths, ſtanding upon my pillow, leſt my father, who lay in the chamber below, ſhould hear me afoot, and ſuſpect my deſign.

Having dreſſed myſelf with great diſpatch and diſorder, I flounced down ſtairs, ſtalking as heavily as I could tread, that he might miſtake me for one of the ſervants; and my confederate opening the door, I ſallied out into the ſtreet, though I knew not which way to turn, and, to my unſpeakable mortification, neither coach nor chair appeared.

Having travelled on foot a good way, in hope of finding a convenience; and being not only diſappointed in that particular, but alſo bewildered in my peregrination, I began to be exceedingly alarmed with the apprehenſion of being met by ſome perſon who might know me; becauſe, in that caſe, my deſign would undoubtedly have been diſcovered, from every circumſtance of my appearance at that time of day; for I had put on the very cloaths which I had pulled off over night, ſo that my dreſs was altogether odd and peculiar: my ſhoes were very fine, and over a large hoop I wore a pink ſattin quilted petticoat trimmed with ſilver, which was partly covered by

by a white dimity night-gown, a full quarter of a yard too ſhort: my handkerchief and apron were hurried on without pinning; my night-cap could not contain my hair, which hung about my ears in great diſorder, and my countenance denoted a mixture of hope and fear, joy and ſhame.

In this dilemma, I made my addreſſes to that honourable member of ſociety a ſhoe-black, whom I earneſtly intreated to provide me with a coach or chair, promiſing to reward him liberally for his trouble: but he having the misfortune to be lame, was unable to keep up with my pace; ſo that, by his advice and direction, I went into the firſt public-houſe I found open, where I ſtayed ſome time, in the utmoſt conſternation, among a crew of wretches whom I thought proper to bribe for their civility, not without the terror of being ſtripped. At length, however, my meſſenger returned with a chair, of which I took immediate poſſeſſion; and fearing that, by this time, my family would be alarmed, and ſend directly to lord W——m's lodgings, I ordered myſelf to be carried thither backwards, that ſo I might paſs undiſcovered.

This ſtratagem ſucceeded according to my wiſh; I ran up ſtairs, in a ſtate of trepidation, to my faithful lover, who called an hackney-coach, in which we went to church and were married.

His fears were then all over, but mine recurred with double aggravation: I dreaded the ſight of my father, and ſhared all the ſorrow he ſuffered on account of my undutiful behaviour: for I loved him with ſuch piety of affection, that I would have endured every other ſpecies of diſtreſs, rather than

than have given him the leaſt uneaſineſs: but love (where he reigns in full empire) is altogether irreſiſtible, ſurmounts every difficulty, and ſwallows up all other conſiderations. This was the caſe with me; and now the irrevocable ſtep was taken, my firſt care was to avoid his ſight. With this view, I begged that lord W——m would think of ſome remote place in the country, to which we might retire for the preſent; and he forthwith conducted me to an houſe on Blackheath, where we were very civilly received by a laughter-loving dame, who ſeemed to miſtake me for one of her own ſiſterhood.

I no ſooner perceived her opinion, than I deſired lord W——m to undeceive her; upon which ſhe was made acquainted with the predicament in which I ſtood, and ſhewed us into a private room, where I called for pen and paper, and wrote an apology to my father, for having acted contrary to his will, in ſo important a concern.

This taſk being performed, the bridegroom gave me to underſtand, that there was a neceſſity for our being bedded immediately, in order to render the marriage binding, leſt my father ſhould diſcover and part us before conſummation. I pleaded hard for a reſpite till the evening, objecting to the indecency of going to bed before noon; but he found means to invalidate all my arguments, and to convince me, that it was now my duty to obey. Rather than hazard the imputation of being obſtinate and refractory on the firſt day of my probation, I ſuffered myſelf to be led into a chamber, which was darkened by my expreſs ſtipulation, that my ſhame and confuſion might be the better concealed, and yielded to the pri-

privilege of a dear huſband, who loved me to adoration.

About five o'clock in the afternoon we were called to dinner, which we had ordered to be ready at four; but ſuch a paultry care had been forgot, amidſt the tranſports of our mutual bliſs. We got up, however, and when we came down ſtairs, I was aſhamed to ſee the light of day, or meet the eyes of my beloved lord. I ate little, ſaid leſs, was happy, though overwhelmed with confuſion, underwent a thouſand agitations, ſome of which were painful, but by far the greater part belonged to rapture and delight; we were imparadiſed in the gratification of our mutual wiſhes, and felt all that love can beſtow, and ſenſibility enjoy.

In the twilight, we returned to lord W——m's lodgings in town, where I received a letter from my father, importing, that he would never ſee me again. But there was one circumſtance in his manner of writing, from which I conceived an happy preſage of his future indulgence. He had begun with his uſual appellation of *Dear Fanny*, which, though it was expunged to make way for the word *Madam*, encouraged me to hope that his paternal fondneſs was not yet extinguiſhed.

At ſupper, we were viſited by lord W——m's youngeſt ſiſter, who laughed at us for our inconſiderate match, though, ſhe owned, ſhe envied our happineſs, and offered me the uſe of her cloaths, until I could retrieve my own. She was a woman of a great deal of humour, plain but genteel, civil, friendly, and perfectly well-bred. She favoured us with her company till the night was pretty far advanced, and did not take her leave till we retired to our apartment.

As

As our lodgings were not ſpacious or magnificent, we reſolved to ſee little company; but this reſolution was fruſtrated by the numerous acquaintance of lord W——m, who let in half the town; ſo that I ran the gauntlet for a whole week among a ſet of wits, who always delight in teazing a young creature of any note, when ſhe happens to make ſuch a ſtolen match. Among thoſe that viſited us upon this occaſion, was my lord's younger brother, who was at that time in keeping with a rich heireſs of maſculine memory, and took that opportunity of making a parade with his equipage, which was indeed very magnificent, but altogether diſregarded by us, whoſe happineſs conſiſted in the opulence of mutual love.

This ceremony of receiving viſits being performed, we went to wait on his mother the ducheſs of H———, who hearing I was an heireſs, readily forgave her ſon for marrying without her knowledge and conſent, and favoured us with a very cordial reception; inſomuch that, for ſeveral months, we dined almoſt conſtantly at her table; and I muſt own, I always found her unaltered in her civility and affection, contrary to her general character, which was haughty and capricious. She was undoubtedly a woman of great ſpirit and underſtanding, but ſubject to an infirmity which very much impairs and diſguiſes every other qualification.

In about three weeks after our marriage, I was ſo happy as to obtain the forgiveneſs of my father, to whoſe houſe we repaired, in order to pay our reſpects and ſubmiſſion. At ſight of me he wept; nor did I behold his tears unmoved: my heart was over-charged with tenderneſs and ſorrow,

row, for having offended ſuch an indulgent parent; ſo that I mingled my tears with his, while my dear huſband, whoſe ſoul was of the ſofteſt and gentleſt mould, melted with ſympathy at the affecting ſcene.

Being thus reconciled to my father, we attended him into the country, where we were received by my mother, who was a ſenſible good woman, though not ſuſceptible of love, and therefore leſs apt to excuſe a weakneſs, to which ſhe was an utter ſtranger. This was likewiſe the caſe with an uncle, from whom I had great expectations. He was a plain good-natured man, and treated us with great courteſy; though his notions, in point of love, were not exactly conformable to ours. Nevertheleſs, I was, and ſeemed to be ſo happy in my choice, that my family not only became ſatisfied with the match, but exceedingly fond of lord W——m.

After a ſhort ſtay with them in the country, we returned to London, in order to be introduced at court, and then ſet out for the North, on a viſit to my brother-in-law the duke of H———, who had, by a letter to lord W——m, invited us to his habitation. My father accordingly equipped us with horſes and money; for our own finances were extremely ſlender, conſiſting only of a ſmall penſion allowed by his grace, upon whom the brothers were intirely dependent, the father having died ſuddenly, before ſuitable proviſion could be made for his younger children.

When I took my leave of my relations, bidding adieu to my paternal home, and found myſelf launching into a world of care and trouble, though the voyage on which I had embarked was altogether voluntary, and my companion the perſon

ſon on whom I doated to diſtraction, I could not help feeling ſome melancholy ſenſations, which, however, in a little time, gave way to a train of more agreeable ideas. I was viſited in town by almoſt all the women of faſhion, many of whom, I perceived, envied me the poſſeſſion of a man who had made ſtrange havock among their hearts, and ſome of them knew the value of his favour. One in particular endeavoured to cultivate my friendſhip with ſingular marks of regard; but I thought proper to diſcourage her advances, by keeping within the bounds of bare civility; and indeed, to none of them was I laviſh of my complaiſance; for I dedicated my whole time to the object of my affection, who engroſſed my wiſhes to ſuch a degree, that although I was never jealous (becauſe I had no reaſon to be ſo) I envied the happineſs of every woman whom he chanced at any time to hand into a coach.

The ducheſs of ———, who was newly married to the earl of P——, a particular friend of lord W——m's, carried me to court, and preſented me to the queen, who expreſſed her approbation of my perſon in very particular terms, and obſerved the ſatisfaction that appeared in my countenance with marks of admiration; deſiring her ladies to take notice, how little happineſs depended upon wealth, ſince there was more joy in my face than in all her court beſide.

Such a declaration could not fail to overwhelm me with bluſhes, which her majeſty ſeemed to behold with pleaſure; for ſhe frequently repeated the remark, and ſhewed me to all the foreigners of diſtinction, with many gracious expreſſions of favour. She wiſhed lord W—— m happineſs inſtead of joy, and was pleaſed to promiſe, that ſhe would

would provide for her pretty beggars: and poor enough we certainly were in every article but love. Nevertheleſs, we felt no neceſſities, but paſſed the ſummer in a variety of pleaſures and parties, the greateſt part of which were planned by lord W——m's ſiſter and another lady, who was at that time miſtreſs to the prime miniſter. The firſt was a wit, but homely in her perſon; the other, a woman of great beauty and maſculine underſtanding; and a particular friendſhip ſubſiſted between them, though they were both lovers of power and admiration.

This lady, who ſat at the helm, was extremely elegant as well as expenſive in her diverſions, in many of which we bore a ſhare; particularly in her parties upon the water, which were contrived in all the magnificence of taſte. In the courſe of theſe amuſements, a trifling circumſtance occurred, which I ſhall relate as an inſtance of that jealous ſenſibility which characteriſed lord W——'s diſpoſition. A large company of ladies and gentlemen having agreed to dine at Vauxhall, and ſup at Marblehall, where we propoſed to conclude the evening with a dance, one barge being inſufficient to contain the whole company, we were divided by lots; in conſequence of which, my huſband and I were parted. This ſeparation was equally mortifying to us both, who, though married, were ſtill lovers; and my chagrin was increaſed, when I perceived that I was doomed to ſit by Sir W—— Y——, a man of profeſſed gallantry: for, although lord W——m had, before his marriage, made his addreſſes to every woman he ſaw, I knew very well he did not deſire that any perſon ſhould make love to his wife.

That I might not therefore give umbrage, by talking to this gallant, I converſed with a Scotch nobleman, who, according to common report, had formerly ſighed among my admirers: by theſe means, in ſeeking to avoid one error, I unwittingly plunged myſelf into a greater; and diſobliged Lord W——m ſo much, that he could not conceal his diſpleaſure; nay, ſo deeply was he offended at my conduct, that in the evening, when the ball began, he would ſcarce deign to take me by the hand in the courſe of dancing, and darted ſuch unkind looks as pierced me to the very ſoul; and what augmented my concern, was my ignorance of the treſpaſs I had committed. I was tortured with a thouſand uneaſy reflections; I began to fear that I had miſtaken his temper, and given my heart to a man who was tired of poſſeſſion; tho' I reſolved to bear without complaining the misfortune I had entailed upon myſelf.

I ſeized the firſt opportunity of ſpeaking to him, and thereby diſcovered the cauſe of his chagrin; but, as there was no time for expoſtulation, the miſunderſtanding continued on his ſide, with ſuch evident marks of uneaſineſs, that every individual of the company made up to me, and inquired about the cauſe of his diſorder; ſo that I was fain to amuſe their concern, by ſaying that he had been ill the day before, and dancing did not agree with his conſtitution. So much was he incenſed by this unhappy circumſtance of my conduct, which was void of all intention to offend him, that he determined to be revenged of me, for my indiſcretion, and at ſupper, chancing to ſit between two very handſome ladies, (one of whom is lately dead, and the other,

her, at preſent, my neighbour in the country) e affected an air of gaiety, and openly coquetted with them both.

This was not the only puniſhment he inflicted n his innocent wife. In the courſe of our entertainment, we engaged in ſome ſimple diverſion, in conſequence of which, the gentlemen were ordered to ſalute the ladies; when Lord W——m, in performing this command, unkindly neglected me in my turn; and I had occaſion or all my diſcretion and pride, to conceal from he company the agonies I felt at this mark of ndifference and diſreſpect. However, I obtained he victory over myſelf, and pretended to laugh t his huſband-like behaviour, while the tears ood in my eyes, and my heart ſwelled even to urſting.

We broke up about five, after having ſpent he moſt tedious evening I had ever known; and his offended lover went to bed in a ſtate of ſullen lence and diſguſt. Whatever deſire I had to ome to an explanation, I thought myſelf ſo uch aggrieved by his unreaſonable prejudice, at I could not prevail upon myſelf to demand a onference, till after his firſt nap, when my pride iving way to my tenderneſs, I claſped him in y arms, though he pretended to diſcourage eſe advances of my love: I aſked how he could e ſo unjuſt as to take umbrage at my civility to man whom, he knew, I had refuſed for his ke. I chid him for his barbarous endeavours awake my jealouſy, and uſed ſuch irreſiſtible arguments in my own vindication, that e was convinced of my innocence, ſealed my cquittal with a kind embrace, and we mutually

enjoyed the ſoft tranſports of a fond reconci-liation.

Never was paſſion more eager, delicate, or unreſerved, than that which glowed within our breaſts. Far from being cloyed with the poſſeſ-ſion of each other, our raptures ſeemed to in-creaſe with the term of our union. When we were parted, though but for a few hours, by the neceſſary avocations of life, we were unhappy during that brief ſeparation, and met again, like lovers who knew no joy but in one another's preſence. How many delicious evenings did we ſpend together, in our own little apartment, after we had ordered the candles to be taken away, that we might enjoy the agreeable reflection of the moon, in a fine ſummer's evening. Such a mild and ſolemn ſcene naturally diſpoſes the mind to peace and benevolence; but when improved with the converſation of the man one loves, it fills the imagination with ideas of ineffable delight! For my own part, I can ſafely ſay, my heart was ſo wholly ingroſſed by my huſband, that I never took pleaſure in any diverſion, where he was not perſonally concerned; nor was I ever guilty of one thought repugnant to my duty and my love.

In the autumn we ſet out for the north, and were met on the road by the duke and twenty gentlemen, who conducted us to H——n, where we lived in all imaginable ſplendor. His grace, at that time, maintained above an hundred ſervants, with a band of muſic, which always performed at dinner, kept open table, and was viſited by a great deal of company. The œconomy of his houſe was ſuperintended by his eldeſt ſiſter, a beautiful young lady of an amiable temper, with whom

whom I ſoon contracted an intimate friendſhip. She and the duke uſed to rally me upon my fondneſs for lord W——m, who was a ſort of an humouriſt, and apt to be in a pet, in which caſe he would leave the company, and go to bed by ſeven o'clock in the evening. On theſe occaſions I always diſappeared, giving up every conſideration to that of pleaſing my huſband, notwithſtanding the ridicule of his relations, who taxed me with having ſpoiled him with too much indulgence. But how could I expreſs too much tenderneſs and condeſcenſion for a man, who doated upon me to ſuch exceſs, that when buſineſs obliged him to leave me, he always ſnatched the firſt opportunity to return, and often rode through darkneſs, ſtorms and tempeſts to my arms.

Having ſtayed about ſeven months in this place, I found myſelf in a fair way of being a mother; and that I might be near my own relations, in ſuch an intereſting ſituation, I and my dear companion departed from H——n, not without great reluctance; for I was fond of the Scots in general, who treated me with great hoſpitality and reſpect; and to this day, they pay me the compliment of ſaying, I was one of the beſt wives in that country, which is ſo juſtly celebrated for good women.

Lord W——m having attended me to my father's houſe, was obliged to return to Scotland, to ſupport his intereſt in being elected member of parliament; ſo that he took his leave of me, with a full reſolution of ſeeing me again, before the time of my lying-inn; and all the comfort I enjoyed in his abſence, was the peruſal of his letters, which I punctually received, together

with thoſe of his ſiſter, who, from time to time, favoured me with aſſurances of his conſtancy and devotion. Indeed theſe teſtimonials were neceſſary to one of my diſpoſition; for I was none of thoſe who could be contented with half an heart. I could not even ſpare one complacent look to any other woman, but expected the undivided homage of his love. Had I been diſappointed in this expectation, I ſhould (though a wife) have rebelled or died.

Mean while, my parents treated me with great tenderneſs, intending that lord W——m ſhould be ſettled in a houſe of his own, and accommodated with my fortune; and his expectations from the queen were very ſanguine, when I was taken ill, and delivered of a dead child: an event which affected me ſo much, that when I underſtood the extent of my misfortune, my heart throbbed with ſuch violence, that my breaſt could ſcarce contain it; and my anxiety being aggravated by the abſence of my lord, produced a dangerous fever, of which he was no ſooner apprized by letter, than he came poſt from Scotland; but before his arrival, I was ſuppoſed to be in a fair way.

During this journey, he was tortured with all that terrible ſuſpence which prevails in the minds of thoſe who are in danger of loſing that which is moſt dear to them; and when he entered the houſe, was ſo much overwhelmed with apprehenſion, that he durſt not inquire about the ſtate of my health.

As for my part, I never cloſed an eye from the time on which I expected his return; and when I heard his voice, threw open my curtains, and ſat up in the bed to receive him, though at the

the hazard of my life. He ran towards me with all the eagerneſs of paſſion, and claſp'd me in his arms; he kneeled by my bed-ſide, kiſſed my hand a thouſand times, and wept with tranſports of tenderneſs and joy. In ſhort, this meeting was ſo pathetic, as to overcome my enfeebled conſtitution; and we were parted by thoſe who were wiſer than ourſelves, and ſaw that nothing was ſo proper for us as a little repoſe.

But how ſhall I relate the deplorable tranſition from envied happineſs to exceſs of miſery, which I now ſuſtained! My month was hardly up, when my dear huſband was taken ill: perhaps the fatigue of body as well as mind, which he had undergone on my account, occaſioned a fatal ferment in his blood, and his health fell a ſacrifice to his love. Phyſicians were called from London; but alas! they brought no hopes of his recovery. By their advice, he was removed to town, for the convenience of being punctually attended. Every moment was too precious to be thrown away; he was therefore immediately put into the coach, though the day was far ſpent; and I, though exceedingly weak, accompanied him in the journey, which was performed by the light of flambeaus, and rendered unſpeakably ſhocking, by the diſmal apprehenſion of loſing him every moment.

At length, however, we arrived at our lodgings in Pall-mall, where I lay by him on the floor, and attended the iſſue of his diſtemper, in all the agonies of horror and deſpair. In a little time his malady ſettled upon his brain, and in his delirium, he uttered ſuch dreadful exclamations, as were ſufficient to pierce the moſt ſavage heart. What effect then muſt they have had on mine, which was fraught with every ſentiment of the

moſt melting affection! It was not a common grief that took poſſeſſion of my ſoul; I felt all the aggravation of the moſt acute diſtreſs. I ſometimes ran down to the ſtreet in a fit of diſtraction: I ſent for the doctors every minute: I wearied heaven with my prayers; even now my heart akes at the remembrance of what I ſuffered, and I cannot without trembling proceed with the woeful ſtory.

After having lain inſenſible ſome days, he recovered the uſe of ſpeech, and called upon my name, which he had a thouſand times repeated, while he was bereft of reaſon. All hopes of his life were now relinquiſhed, and I was led to his bed-ſide to receive his laſt adieu, being directed to ſummon all my fortitude, and ſuppreſs my ſorrow, that he might not be diſturbed by my agitation. I collected all my reſolution to ſupport me in this affecting ſcene: I ſaw my dear lord in extremity; the beauties of his youth were all decayed, yet his eyes, though languid, retained unſpeakable ſweetneſs and expreſſion. He felt his end approaching, put forth his hand, and with a look full of complacency and benevolence, uttered ſuch a tender tale——Good heaven! how had I deſerved ſuch accumulated affliction! the bare remembrance of which now melts me into tears. Human nature could not undergo my ſituation, without ſuffering an extaſy of grief! I claſped him in my arms, and kiſſed him a thouſand times, with the moſt violent emotions of woe: but I was torn from his embrace, and in a little time he was raviſhed for ever from my view.

On that fatal morning, which put a period to his life, I ſaw the ducheſs of L—— approach my bed

bed, and, from her appearance, concluded that he was no more; yet I begg'd ſhe would not confirm the unhappy preſage, by announcing his death; and ſhe accordingly preſerved the moſt emphatic ſilence. I got up, and trod ſoftly over his head, as if I had been afraid of interrupting his repoſe. Alas! he was no longer ſenſible of ſuch diſturbance. I was ſeized with a ſtupification of ſorrow: I threw up the window, and looking around, thought the ſun ſhone with the moſt diſmal aſpect; every thing was ſolitary, chearleſs, and replete with horror.

In this condition I was, by the direction of my friend, conveyed to her houſe, where my faculties were ſo overpowered by the load of anguiſh which oppreſſed me, that I know not what paſſed during the firſt days of my unhappy widowhood: this only I know, the kind ducheſs treated me with all imaginable care and compaſſion, and carried me to her country-houſe, where I ſtayed ſome months; during which, ſhe endeavoured to comfort me with all the amuſements ſhe could invent, and laid me under ſuch obligations, as ſhall never be eraſed from my remembrance: yet, notwithſtanding all her care and concern, I was, by my exceſs of grief, plunged into a languiſhing diſtemper, for which my phyſicians adviſed me to drink the Bath waters.

In compliance with this preſcription, I went thither towards the end of ſummer, and found ſome benefit by adhering to their directions; though I ſeldom went abroad, except when I viſited my ſiſter-in-law, who was there with the princeſs; and upon theſe occaſions, I never failed to attract the notice of the company, who were

ſtruck with the appearance of ſuch a young crea-
ture in weeds. Nor was I free from the perſecu-
tion of profeſſed admirers; but being dead to all
joy, I was deaf to the voice of adulation.

About Chriſtmas, I repaired to my father's
houſe, where my ſorrows were revived by every
object that recalled the idea of my dear lamented
lord. But theſe melancholy reflections I was ob-
liged to bear, becauſe I had no other home or ha-
bitation, being left an unprovided widow, altoge-
ther dependant on the affection of my own family.

During this winter, divers overtures were made
to my father, by people who demanded me in
marriage; but my heart was not yet ſufficiently
weaned from my former paſſion, to admit the
thoughts of another maſter. Among thoſe that
preſented their propoſals, was a certain young
nobleman, who upon the firſt news of lord
W——m's death, came poſt from Paris, in or-
der to declare his paſſion. He made his firſt ap-
pearance in a hired chariot and ſix, accompanied
by a big fat fellow, whom (as I afterwards
learn'd) he had engaged to ſound his praiſes, with
the promiſe of a thouſand pounds, in lieu of
which he paid him with forty. Whether it was
with a view of ſcreening himſelf from the cold,
or of making a comfortable medium in caſe of
being overturned, and falling under his weighty
companion, I know not; but certain it is, the
carriage was ſtuffed with hay, in ſuch a manner
that when he arrived, the ſervants were at ſome
pains in rummaging and removing it, before they
could come at their maſter, or help him to alight.
When he was lifted out of the chariot, he ex-
hibited a very ludicrous figure to the view: he
was a thin, meagre, ſhivering creature, of a low
ſtature,

ſtature, with little black eyes, a long noſe, ſallow complexion, and pitted with the ſmall pox, dreſſed in a coat of light brown frize, lined with pink-coloured ſhag, a monſtrous ſolitaire and bag, and (if I remember aright) a pair of huge jack-boots. In a word, his whole appearance was ſo little calculated for inſpiring love, that I had (on the ſtrength of ſeeing him once before at Oxford) ſet him down as the laſt man on earth, whom I would chuſe to wed; and I will venture to affirm, that he was, in every particular, the very reverſe of my late huſband.

As my father was not at home, he ſtayed but one evening, and left his errand with my mother, to whom he was as diſagreeable as to myſelf; ſo that his propoſal was abſolutely rejected; and I heard no more of him during the ſpace of three whole months, at the expiration of which, I went to town, where this mortifying figure preſented itſelf again, and renewed his ſuit, offering ſuch advantageous terms of ſettlement, that my father began to reliſh the match, and warmly recommended it to my conſideration.

Lord W——m's relations adviſed me to embrace the opportunity of making myſelf independent; all my acquaintance plied me with with arguments to the ſame purpoſe: I was uneaſy at home, and indifferent to all mankind. I weighed the motives with the objections, and with reluctance yielded to the importunity of my friends.

In conſequence of this determination, the little gentleman was permitted to viſit me; and the manner of his addreſs did not at all alter the opinion I had conceived of his character and underſtanding. I was even ſhocked at the proſpect of marrying a man whom I could not love; and,

in order to diſburthen my own conſcience, took an opportunity of telling him one evening, as we ſat oppoſite to each other, that it was not in my power to command my affection, and therefore he could not expect the poſſeſſion of my heart, lord W——m's indulgence having ſpoiled me for a wife. Nevertheleſs, I would endeavour to contract a friendſhip for him, which would intirely depend upon his own behaviour.

To this declaration he replied (to my great ſurprize) that he did not deſire me to love him, my friendſhip was ſufficient; and next day, repeated this ſtrange inſtance of moderation in a letter, which I communicated to my ſiſter, who laughed heartily at the contents, and perſuaded me, that ſince I could love no man, he was the propereſt perſon to be my huſband.

Accordingly, the wedding-cloaths and equipage being prepared, the day—*the fatal day was fixed!* on the morning of which, I went to the houſe of my brother-in-law duke H——, who loved me tenderly, and took my leave of the family; a family which I ſhall always remember with love, honour, and eſteem. His grace received me in the moſt affectionate manner, ſaying at parting, "Lady W——m, if he does not uſe you well, I will take you back again."

The bridegroom and I met at Ox—— chapel, where the ceremony was performed by the biſhop of W——, in preſence of his mother, my father, and another lady; and the nuptial knot being tied, we ſet out for my father's houſe in the country, and proceeded full twenty miles on our journey, before my lord opened his mouth; my thoughts having been all that time employed on ſomething quite foreign to my preſent ſitua-

tion; for I was then but a giddy girl of eighteen. At length my father broke ſilence, and clapping his lordſhip on the ſhoulder, told him he was but a dull bridegroom; upon which, my lord gave him to underſtand, that he was out of ſpirits. This dejection continued all the day, notwithſtanding the refreſhment of a plentiful dinner, which he ate upon the road; and in the evening we arrived at the place of deſtination, where we were kindly received by my mother, though ſhe had no liking to the match; and after ſupper, we retired to our apartment.

It was here that I had occaſion to perceive the moſt diſagreeable contraſt between my preſent help-mate and my former lord: inſtead of flying to my arms with all the eagerneſs of love and rapture, this manly repreſentative ſat moping in a corner, like a criminal on execution-day, and owned he was aſhamed to bed a woman, whoſe hand he had ſcarce ever touched.

I could not help being affected with this puſilanimous behaviour: I remembered lord W——m, while I ſurveyed the object before me, and made ſuch a compariſon as filled me with horror and diſguſt: nay, to ſuch a degree did my averſion to this phantom prevail, that I began to ſweat with anguiſh at the thought of being ſubjected to his pleaſure: and when, after a long heſitation, he ventured to approach me, I trembled as if I had been expoſed to the embraces of a rattle-ſnake. Nor did the efforts of his love diminiſh this antipathy; his attempts were like the pawings of an imp, ſent from hell to teize and torment ſome guilty wretch, ſuch as are exhibited in ſome dramatic performance, which I never ſee acted, without remembering my wedding-night.

By ſuch ſhadowy, unſubſtantial, vexatious behaviour, was I tantalized, and robb'd of my repoſe; and early next morning I got up, with a moſt ſovereign contempt for my bedfellow, who indulged himſelf in bed till eleven.

Having paſſed a few days in this place, I went home with him to his houſe at Twickenham; and ſoon after we were preſented at court, when the queen was pleaſed to ſay to my lord's mother, ſhe did not doubt that we ſhould be an happy couple, for I had been a good wife to my former husband.

Whatever deficiencies I had to complain of in my new ſpouſe, he was not wanting in point of liberality: I was preſented with a very fine chariot ſtudded with ſilver nails, and ſuch a profuſion of jewels as furniſhed a joke to ſome of my acquaintance, who obſerved that I was formerly queen of hearts, but now metamorphoſed into the queen of diamonds. This uncommon ſplendour attracted the eyes and envy of my competitors, who were the more implacable in their reſentments, becauſe, notwithſtanding my marriage, I was as much as ever followed by the men of gallantry and pleaſure, among whom it is a conſtant maxim, that a woman never with-holds her affections from her husband, without an intention to beſtow them ſomewhere elſe. I never appeared without a train of admirers, and my houſe in the country was always crouded with gay young men of quality.

Among thoſe who cultivated my good graces with the greateſt ſkill and aſſiduity, were the earl C——, and Mr. S——, brother to lord F—. The former of whom, in the courſe of his addreſſes, treated me with an entertainment of ſurpriſing

priſing magnificence, diſpoſed into a dinner, ſupper, and ball; to which I, at his deſire, invited eleven ladies, whom he paired with the like number of his own ſex: ſo that the whole company amounted to twenty-four. We were regaled with a moſt elegant dinner, in an apartment which was altogether ſuperb, and ſerved by gentlemen only, no livery-ſervant being permitted to come within the door. In the afternoon we embarked in two ſplendid barges, being attended by a band of muſick, in a third; and enjoyed a delightful evening upon the river, till the twilight, when we returned, and began the ball, which was conducted with ſuch order and taſte, that mirth and good humour prevailed, and no diſſatisfaction appeared, except in the countenance of one old maid, ſince married to a ſon of the duke of ——, who, tho' ſhe would not refuſe to partake of ſuch an agreeable entertainment, was diſpleaſed that I ſhould have the honour of inviting her. O baleful Envy! thou ſelf-tormenting fiend! How do'ſt thou predominate in all aſſemblies, from the grand gala of a court to the meeting of ſimple peaſants at their harveſt-home! Nor is the prevalence of this ſordid paſſion to be wondered at, if we conſider the weakneſs, pride, and vanity of our ſex. The preſence of one favourite man ſhall poiſon the enjoyment of a whole company, and produce the moſt rancorous enmity betwixt the cloſeſt friends.

I danced with the maſter of the ball, who employed all the artillery of his eloquence in making love; yet I did not liſten to his addreſſes, for he was not to my taſte, tho' he poſſeſſed an agreeable perſon, and a good acquired underſtanding; but he was utterly ignorant of that gentle prevailing

ing art which I afterwards experienced in Mr. S—, and which was the only method he could have ſucceſsfully practiſed, in ſeducing a young woman like me, born with ſentiments of honour, and trained up in the paths of religion and virtue. He was, indeed, abſolutely maſter of thoſe inſinuating qualifications which few women of paſſion and ſenſibility can reſiſt; and had a perſon every way adapted for profiting by theſe inſidious talents. He was well acquainted with the human heart, conſcious of his own power and capacity, and exerciſed theſe endowments with unwearied perſeverance. He was tall and thin, which was perfectly agreeable to my taſte, with large blue eloquent eyes, good teeth, and a long head turned to gallantry. His behaviour was the ſtandard of politeneſs, and all his advances were conducted with the moſt profound reſpect; which is the moſt effectual expedient a man can uſe againſt us, if he can find means to perſuade us, that it proceeds from the exceſs and delicacy of his paſſion. It is no other than a ſilent compliment, by which our accompliſhments are continually flattered, and pleaſes in proportion to the ſuppoſed underſtanding of him who pays it.

By theſe arts and advantages this conſummate politician in love began by degrees to ſap the foundations of my conjugal faith; he ſtole imperceptibly into my affection, and, by dint of opportunity, which he well knew how to improve, triumphed, at laſt, over all his rivals.

Nor was he the only perſon that diſputed my heart with Earl C——, who was alſo rivaled by lord C— H—, a Scotchman, who had been an intimate and relation of my former husband. This gentleman I would have preferred to moſt

of his competitors, and I coqueted with him for ſome time: but this amour was interrupted by his going to Ireland; upon which occaſion, underſtanding that he was but indifferently provided with money, I made him a preſent of a gold ſnuff-box, in which was incloſed a bank-note; a trifling mark of my eſteem, which he afterwards juſtified by the moſt grateful, friendly, and genteel behaviour; and as we correſponded by letters, I frankly told him, that Mr. S— had ſtept in, and won the palm from all the reſt of my admirers.

This new favourite's mothers and ſiſters, who lived in the neighbourhood, were my conſtant companions; and, in conſequence of this intimacy, he never let a day paſs without paying his reſpects to me in perſon; nay, ſo ingenious was he in contriving the means of promoting his ſuit, that whether I rode or walked, went abroad or ſtayed at home, he was always of courſe one of the party: ſo that his deſign ſeemed to ingroſs his whole vigilance and attention. Thus he ſtudied my diſpoſition, and eſtabliſhed himſelf in my good opinion, at the ſame time. He found my heart was ſuſceptible of every tender impreſſion, and ſaw that I was not free from the vanity of youth; he had already acquired my friendſhip and eſteem, from which he knew there was a ſhort and eaſy tranſition to love; and by his penetration chooſing proper ſeaſons for the theme, urged it with ſuch pathetic vows and artful adulation, as well might captivate a young woman of my complexion and inexperience, and circumſtanced as I was, with a huſband whom I had ſuch reaſon to deſpiſe.

Tho'

Tho' he thus made an inſenſible progreſs in my heart, he did not find my virtue an eaſy conqueſt; and I myſelf was ignorant of the advantage he had gained, with regard to my inclinations, until I was convinced of his ſucceſs by an alarm of jealouſy which I one day felt, at ſeeing him engaged in converſation with another lady. I forthwith recognized this ſymptom of love, with which I had been formerly acquainted, and trembled at the diſcovery of my own weakneſs. I underwent a ſtrange agitation and mixture of contrary ſenſations: I was pleaſed with the paſſion, yet aſhamed of avowing it even to my own mind. The rights of a huſband (tho' mine was but a nominal one) occurred to my reflexion, and virtue, modeſty and honour forbad me to cheriſh the guilty flame.

While I encouraged theſe laudable ſcruples, and reſolved to ſacrifice my love to duty and reputation, my lord was almoſt every day employed in riding poſt to my father, with complaints of my conduct, which was hitherto irreproachable; tho' the greateſt grievance which he pretended to have ſuffered, was my refuſing to comply with his deſire, when he intreated me to lie a whole hour every morning, with my neck uncovered, that by gazing he might quiet the perturbation of his ſpirits. From this requeſt you may judge of the man, as well as of the regard I muſt entertain for his character and diſpoſition.

During the whole ſummer I was beſieged by my artful undoer, and in the autumn ſet out with my lord for Bath, where, by reaſon of the intimacy that ſubſiſted between our families, we lived in the ſame houſe with my lover and his ſiſter, who, with another agreeable young lady, accom-

accompanied us in this expedition. By this time Mr. S— had extorted from me a confeſſion of a mutual flame, tho' I aſſured him that it ſhould never induce me to give up the valuable poſſeſſions of an unſpotted character, and a conſcience void of offence. I offered him all the enjoyment he could reap from an unreſerved intercourſe of ſouls, abſtracted from any ſenſual conſideration; and he eagerly embraced the Platonic propoſal, becauſe he had ſagacity enough to foreſee the iſſue of ſuch chimerical contracts, and knew me too well to think he could accompliſh his purpoſe without ſeeming to acquieſce in my own terms, and cultivating my tenderneſs under the ſpecious pretext.

In conſequence of this agreement we took all opportunities of ſeeing each other in private; and theſe interviews were ſpent in mutual proteſtations of diſintereſted love. This correſpondence, tho' dangerous, was (on my ſide) equally innocent and endearing; and many happy hours we paſs'd, before my ſentiments were diſcovered. At length my lover was taken ill, and then my paſſion burſt out beyond the power of concealment; my grief and anxiety became ſo conſpicuous in my countenance, and my behaviour was ſo indiſcreet, that every body in the houſe perceived the ſituation of my thoughts, and blamed my conduct accordingly.

Certain it is I was extremely imprudent, tho' intentionally innocent. I have lain whole nights by my lord, who teized and tormented me for that which neither I could give nor he could take, and ruminated on the fatal conſequence of this unhappy flame, until I was worked into a fever of diſquiet. I ſaw there was no ſafety but in flight,

flight, and often determined to baniſh myſelf for ever from the ſight of this dangerous intruder. But my reſolution always failed at the approach of day, and my deſire of ſeeing him as conſtantly recurred. So far was I from perſiſting in ſuch commendable determinations, that, on the eve of our departure from Bath, I felt the keeneſt pangs of ſorrow at our approaching ſeparation; and as we could not enjoy our private interviews at my houſe in town, I promiſed to viſit him at his own apartments, after he had ſworn by all that's ſacred, that he would take no ſiniſter advantage of my condeſcenſion, by preſuming upon the opportunities I ſhould give.

He kept his word; for he ſaw I truſted to it with fear and trembling, and perceived that my apprehenſion was not affected, but the natural concern of a young creature, diſtracted between love and duty, whom, had he alarmed, he never would have ſeen within his doors again. Inſtead of preſſing me with ſollicitations in favour of his paſſion, he was more than ever reſpectful and complaiſant; ſo that I found myſelf diſengaged of all reſtraint, conducted the converſation, ſhortened and repeated my viſits, at my own pleaſure, till, at laſt, I became ſo accuſtomed to this communication, that his houſe was as familiar to me as my own.

Having in this manner ſecured himſelf in my confidence, he reſumed the favourite topic of love, and warming my imagination by gradual advances on the ſubject, my heart began to pant; and when he ſaw me thus, he ſnatched the favourable occaſion to practiſe all his eloquence and art. I could not reſiſt his energy, nor even fly from the temptation that aſſailed me, until he had

had obtained a promiſe that he ſhould, at our next meeting, reap the fruits of his tedious expectation. Upon this condition I was permitted to retire, and bleſſed heaven for my eſcape, fully determined to continue in the path of virtue I had hitherto trod, and ſtifle the criminal flame, by which my peace and reputation were endangered. But his idea, which reigned within my heart, without controul, ſoon baffled all thoſe prudent ſuggeſtions.

I ſaw him again; and he reminded me of my promiſe, which I endeavoured to evade with affected pleaſantry; upon which he manifeſted the utmoſt diſpleaſure and chagrin, ſhedding ſome crocodile tears, and upbraiding me with levity and indifference. He obſerved, that he had ſollicited my favour for ten long months, without intermiſſion, and imagined I had held out ſo long on virtuous motives only; but now he could plainly perceive that his want of ſucceſs had been owing to my want of affection; and that all my profeſſions were inſincere: in a word, he perſuaded me, that his remonſtrances were juſt and reaſonable. I could not ſee the affliction of a man I loved, when I knew it was in my power to remove it; and rather than forfeit his opinion of my ſincerity and love, I conſented to his wiſh. My heart now flutters at the remembrance of the dear, tho' fatal indiſcretion; yet I reflect without remorſe, and even remember it with pleaſure.

If I could not avoid the cenſure of the world, I was reſolved to bear it without repining; and ſure the guilt (if there was any in my conduct) was but venial; for I conſidered myſelf as a perſon abſolved of all matrimonial ties, by the inſignificance

ſignificance of lord ——, who, tho' a nominal huſband, was, in fact, a mere non-entity. I therefore contracted a new engagement with my lover, to which I reſolved to adhere with the moſt ſcrupulous fidelity, without the leaſt intention of injuring my lord or his relations; for had our mutual paſſion produced any viſible effects, I would immediately have renounced and abandoned my huſband for ever, that the fruit of my love for Mr. S—— might not have inherited, to the detriment of the right heir. This was my determination, which I thought juſt, if not prudent; and for which I have incurred the imputation of folly, in the opinion of this wiſe and honeſt generation, by whoſe example and advice I have, ſince that time, been a little reformed in point of prudentials, tho' I ſtill retain a ſtrong tendency to return to my primitive way of thinking.

When I quitted Mr. S——, after the ſacrifice I had made, and returned to my own bed, it may perhaps be ſuppoſed that I ſlept but little. True: I was kept awake by the joyful impatience of reviſiting my lover. Indeed I neglected no opportunity of flying to his arms: when lord —— was in the country we enjoyed each other's company without interruption, but when he reſided in town our correſpondence was limited to ſtolen interviews, which were unſpeakably delicious, as genuine love preſided at the entertainment.

Such was my happineſs, in the courſe of this tender communication, that to this day I remember it with pleaſure, tho' it has coſt me dear in the ſequel, and was at that time enjoyed at a conſiderable expence; for I devoted myſelf ſo intirely

tirely to my lover, who was deſirous of engroſſing my time and thoughts, that my acquaintance, which was very numerous, juſtly accuſed me of neglect, and of conſequence cooled in their friendſhips: but I was *all for love, or the world well loſt.* And were the ſame opportunity to offer, I would act the ſame conduct over again.

Some there are who poſſibly may wonder how I could love twice with ſuch violence of affection: but all ſuch obſervers muſt be unacquainted with the human heart. Mine was naturally adapted for the tender paſſions, and had been ſo fortunate, ſo cheriſhed, in its firſt impreſſions, that it felt with joy the ſame ſenſations revive, when influenced by the ſame engaging qualifications. Certain it is I loved the ſecond time as well as the firſt, and better was impoſſible. I gave up my all for both: fortune and my father's favour for the one; reputation, friends, and fortune for the other. Yet, notwithſtanding this intimate connexion, I did not relinquiſh the world all at once; on the contrary I ſtill appeared at court, and attracted the notice and approbation of my royal patroneſs; I danced with the p— of W—; a circumſtance which ſo nearly affected Mr. S—, who was preſent, that, in order to manifeſt his reſentment, he choſe the uglieſt woman in the ball for his partner; and I no ſooner perceived his uneaſineſs than I gave over, with a view of appeaſing his diſpleaſure.

Without repeating particular circumſtances, let it ſuffice to ſay, our mutual paſſion was a perfect copy of that which had ſubſiſted between me and my dear lord W——m. It was jealous, melting and delicate, and checquered with little accidents,

accidents, which ſerve to animate and maintain the flame, in its firſt ardency of rapture. When my lover was ſick, I attended and nurſed him with indefatigable tenderneſs and care; and during an indiſpoſition which I caught in the performance of this agreeable office, he diſcharged the obligation with all the warmth of ſympathy and love.

It was, however, judged neceſſary by the phyſicians, that I ſhould uſe the Bath-waters for the recovery of my health; and I ſet out for that place, glad of a pretence to be abſent from lord ——, with whom I lived on very unhappy terms. He had, about nine months after our marriage, deſired that we might ſleep in ſeparate beds, and gave a very whimſical reaſon for this propoſal. He ſaid, the immenſity of his love deprived him of the power of gratification, and that ſome commerce with an object, to which his heart was not attached, might, by diminiſhing the tranſports of his ſpirits, recompoſe his nerves, and enable him to enjoy the fruits of his good fortune.

You may be ſure I made no objections to this plan, which was immediately put in execution. He made his addreſſes to a nymph of Drury-lane, whoſe name (as he told me) was Mrs. Rock. She made ſhift to extract ſome money from her patient; but his infirmity was beyond the power of her art; though ſhe made ſome miſchief between us; and I communicated my ſuſpicion to duke H———, who intended to have expoſtulated with her upon the ſubject; but ſhe got intimation of his deſign, and ſaved him the trouble, by a precipitate retreat.

After my return from the Bath, where Mr. S. and I had lived happily, until we were interrupted by

by the arrival of my huſband, his lordſhip expreſſed an inclination to be my bedfellow again; but in this particular I deſired to be excuſed: for though I would not be the firſt to propoſe the ſeparation, which, though uſual in other countries, is contrary to the cuſtom of England, being unwilling to furniſh the leaſt handle for cenſure, as my character was ſtill unblemiſhed; yet, when the propoſal came from himſelf, I thought myſelf intitled to refuſe a re-union, to which I accordingly objected.

This oppoſition produced a quarrel, which roſe to a ſtate of perpetual animoſity; ſo that we began to talk of parting. My lord reliſhed the expedient, agreeing to add three hundred pounds a year to my pin-money, which (by the bye) was never paid; and I renounced all ſtate and grandeur, to live in a ſmall houſe that I hired at Caſehorton, where I paſſed my time for two months, in the moſt agreeable retirement, with my dear lover, till I was diſturbed by the intruſion of my lord, who moleſted me with viſits and ſolicitations to return, pretending that he had changed his mind, and inſiſting upon my compliance with his deſire.

I exhauſted my invention in endeavours to evade his requeſt; but he perſecuted me without ceaſing: ſo that I was fain to capitulate, on condition that we ſhould immediately ſet out for France; and that he ſhould not preſume to approach my bed, till our arrival at Calais. We accordingly departed for that kingdom; and, far from infringing the laſt article of our treaty, his lordſhip did not inſiſt upon his privilege, before we reached the capital of France.

Mean

Mean while, I began to feel the effect of my paſſion in a very intereſting manner, and communicated my diſcovery to the dear author of it, who would not leave me in ſuch an affecting ſituation, but took the firſt opportunity of following us to France.

In our road to Paris, we ſtopp'd to viſit Chantilly, a magnificent Chateau belonging to the prince of Condé, and there met by accident with ſome Engliſh noblemen, to whom I was known. The prince and his ſiſters invited me very politely into the gallery where they ſat. They complimented me on my perſon, and ſeemed to admire my dreſs, which was altogether new to them, being a blue Engliſh riding-habit trimmed with gold, and an hat with a feather. They were particularly well pleaſed with my hair, which hung down to my waiſt, and preſſed me to ſtay a fortnight at their houſe; an invitation which I was very much mortified at being obliged to refuſe, becauſe my lord did not underſtand the French language. I was inchanted with the place and the company, the women being amiable and the men polite; nor were they ſtrangers to my name and ſtory; for Mr. S—— calling at the ſame place a few days after, they rallied him on my account.

When we arrived at Paris, the firſt thing I did was to metamorphoſe myſelf into a French woman. I cut off my hair, hid a very good complexion of my own with *Rouge*, reconciled myſelf to powder, which I had never uſed before, put on a robe with a large hoop, and went to the *Thuilleries*, full of ſpirits and joy; for at that time every thing conſpired to make me happy: I had health, youth and beauty, love, vanity and

affluence, and found myſelf ſurrounded with diverſions, which were gay, new and agreeable. My appearance drew upon me the eyes of the whole company, who conſidered me as a ſtranger, but not a foreigner, ſo compleatly was I equipped in the faſhion of the French; and when they underſtood who I was, they applauded my perſon with the moſt laviſh encomiums, according to their known politeneſs.

After having made a circuit round all the public places of entertainment in Paris, I was introduced into company, by an Engliſh family reſiding in that city; and, among others, became acquainted with a French lady, whoſe charms were remarkably attractive. The duke of K—— was her admirer; but ſhe lived in reputation with her mother and an agreeable ſiſter, whoſe lover was the prince of C——, (for almoſt every lady in France has her *Amant.*)

With this charming woman, whoſe name was Madam De la T——, I often made parties of pleaſure. The duke, Mr. S——, ſhe and I, uſed to meet in the Bois de Boulogne, which is a pleaſant wood at a ſmall diſtance from Paris, whither the company repairs, in the ſummer-ſeaſon, for the benefit of the air; and after having amuſed ourſelves among the groves, embarked in his grace's equipage, which was extremely elegant, being a calaſh drawn by ſix fine long-tailed greys, adorned with ribbons in the French taſte; and thus we were conducted to a little inchanted, or at leaſt inchanting palace, poſſeſſed by the duke, at one end of the town. The lower apartment, appropriated to me, was furniſhed with yellow and ſilver, the bed ſurrounded with looking-glaſſes, and the door opened

into a garden, laid out in a cradle-walk, and intervening parterres of roſes and other flowers. Above ſtairs my female companion lodged, in a chamber furniſhed with chintz. We ſupped all together in the ſaloon, which, though ſmall, was perfectly elegant. The company was always good-humoured, the converſation ſprightly and joyous, and the ſcene, though often repeated, ſtill delightful and entertaining.

At other times, Mr. S—— and I uſed to paſs our evenings at the palace of the prince of C——, which his highneſs lent us for our accommodation. The apartments opened into the gardens of the Luxembourg, and were, in point of magnificence, ſuitable to the owner. Thither I uſed to repair in a flaming equipage, on pretence of viſiting, and ſpent the beſt part of the night with him, who was dearer to me than all the princes in the world.

While I was happily engaged in theſe raviſhing parties, my little lord was employed in efforts to recover his health by reſtoratives, and I know not what; for he ſtill lamented the enfeebling effects of his paſſion, and complained, that he loved me more like an angel than a woman, though he ſtrove to govern his affection according to the doctrines of the chriſtian religion, as he regulated his life by the maxims of Charles the twelfth of Sweden. The meaning of this declaration I could never learn; and indeed, I have been often tempted to believe he had no meaning at all.

Be that as it will, I found my ſize viſibly increaſing, and my ſituation extremely uneaſy, on account of the perpetual wrangling which prevailed betwixt us, in conſequence of his deſiring to ſleep with me again, after we had parted beds for

for the ſecond time: and, that I might be no longer expoſed to ſuch diſagreeable perſecution, I reſolved to leave him, though at the hazard of my life.

Thus determined, I went to the Britiſh embaſſador in an hackney coach; and, in order to diſguiſe my youth, which might have prepoſſeſſed him againſt my judgment, muffled myſelf up in a black hood, which (as he ſaid) inſtead of lending an air of gravity to my countenance, added a wildneſs to my looks, which was far from being diſagreeable. He had been a gallant man in his youth, and even then, though well ſtricken in years, was not inſenſible to the power of beauty. This diſpoſition, perhaps, rendered him more favourable to my cauſe, though he at firſt adviſed me to return to my huſband; but finding me obſtinate, he undertook to ſerve me in my own way, and procure a protection from the French king, by virtue of which, I could live at Paris unmoleſted by my lord. Nevertheleſs, he adviſed me (if I was determined to leave him) to make the beſt of my way to England, and ſue for a divorce.

I reliſhed his opinion, and concealed myſelf about three days in Paris, during which I borrowed ſome linen; for, as it was impoſſible to convey any thing out of my own houſe without ſuſpicion, I had neither cloaths for my accommodation, nor a ſervant to wait on me.

In this ſolitary condition I took the road to Flanders, after I had put my lord upon a wrong ſcent, by writing a letter to him, dated at Calais, and travelled through an unknown country, without any other attendant than the poſtilion, being ſubjected to this inconvenience by the laws of France, which are ſo ſevere in ſome particulars,

that if any perſon had been apprehended with me, he would have ſuffered death, for going off with a man's wife; though any man might go to bed with the ſame woman, without fear of incurring any legal puniſhment.

I proceeded night and day without intermiſſion, that I might the ſooner reach Flanders, where I knew I ſhould be ſafe; and as the nights were exceſſively cold, I was fain to wrap myſelf up in flannel, which I bought for the purpoſe, as I had no cloaths to keep me warm, and travelled in an open chaiſe. While we paſſed through dreary woods, quite remote from the habitations of men, I was not without apprehenſion of being ſtripped and murthered by the poſtilion; and, in all probability, owed my ſafety to the indigence of my appearance, which might alſo protect me in two miſerable places where I was obliged to lie, before I got out of the territories of France: for, as I could not reach the great towns where I intended to lodge, I was under the neceſſity of putting up at little wretched hovels, where no proviſion was to be had, but ſour brown bread and ſourer cheeſe; and every thing ſeemed to denote the dens of deſpair and aſſaſſination.

I made ſhift, however, to ſubſiſt on this fare, uncomfortable as it was, confided in the meanneſs of my equipage for the ſecurity of my perſon; and at length arriving at Bruſſels, fixed my quarters in the Hotel de Flandre (ſo well known to the Engliſh ſince) where I thought myſelf extremely happy in the accompliſhment of my flight.

I had not been full two days in this place, when I was bleſſed with the ſight of my lover; and having concerted meaſures for proceeding to

Eng-

England, I hired a tall fine Liegeoiſe for a maid; and ſetting out for Oſtend, we embarked in a veſſel, in which Mr. S—— had beſpoke our paſſage. Our voyage was ſhort and proſperous, and the time moſt agreeably ſpent in the company of my dear partner, who was a moſt engaging man in all reſpects, as I dare ſay my lady O—— has ſince found him.

I aſſumed a fictitious name, took private lodgings in Poland-ſtreet, retained lawyers, and commenced a ſuit for ſeparation againſt my lord. I communicated the reaſons of my elopement to my father, who was ſhocked and ſurpriſed at my conduct, which he condemned with expreſſions of ſorrow and reſentment. But the ſtep was taken; nor did I repent of what I had done, except on his account.

In the morning after my arrival at London, I waited upon the lord-chief-juſtice, to whom I complained of the uſage I had received from my lord, whoſe temper was teazing, tireſome, and intolerably capricious. His behaviour was a ſtrange compound of madneſs and folly, ſeaſoned with a ſmall proportion of ſenſe: no wonder then that I, who am hot and haſty, ſhould be wretched, under the perſecution of ſuch a perverſe humouriſt, who uſed to terrify me, and ſcold at me the whole night without intermiſſion, and ſhake my pillow from time to time, that I might not ſleep, while he tormented me with his diſagreeable expoſtulations. I have been often frightened almoſt out of my ſenſes, at ſeeing him convulſed by the moſt unreaſonable paſſion; and chagrined to the higheſt degree of diſguſt, to find (by repeated obſervation) his diſpoſition ſo prepoſterous, that his ſatisfaction and

diſpleaſure never depended upon the cauſe he had to be ſatisfied or diſobliged; but, on the contrary, when he had moſt reaſon to be pleaſed, he was always moſt diſcontented, and very often in good humour, when he had reaſon enough for vexation.

While I lived in Poland-ſtreet, I was engaged with lawyers, and ſo often viſited by my father, that I could not dedicate my whole time, as uſual, to my lover; nor was it convenient that he ſhould be ſeen in my company: he therefore took a ſmall houſe at Camberwell, whither I went as often as I had an opportunity; and maintained the correſpondence with ſuch eagerneſs and induſtry, that although I was ſix months gone with child, I have often, by myſelf, ſet out for his habitation, in an hackney-coach, at eleven o'clock at night, and returned by ſix in the morning, that I might be in my own bed, when my father came to ſee me; for I concealed my amour, as well as the effects of it, from his knowledge, and frequently took water from the Bridge, that my motions might not be diſcovered. Nothing but the moſt paſſionate love could have ſupported my ſpirits under ſuch viciſſitudes of fatigue, or enabled my admirer to ſpend whole days by himſelf, in ſuch a ſolitary retirement.

By this time, my lord was arrived in England, and employed in diſcovering the place of my retreat; ſo that I lived in continual alarm, and provided myſelf with a ſpeaking-trumpet, which ſtood by my bed ſide, to be uſed in calling for aſſiſtance, in caſe my purſuer ſhould make an attack upon my lodgings.

This ſituation being extremely uncomfortable, I had no ſooner begun my proceſs againſt him, that

than I put myſelf intirely under the protection of Mr. S——, who conducted me to the houſe of a friend of his who lived in the country, where I was ſecure from the attempts of my huſband.

The world had now given me up, and I had renounced the world with the moſt perfect reſignation. I weighed in my own breaſt what I ſhould loſe in point of character, with what I ſuffered in my peace at home, and found, that my reputation was not to be preſerved, except at the expence of my quiet, (for his lordſhip was not diſpoſed to make me eaſy, had I been never ſo diſcreet.) I therefore determined to give up a few ceremonial viſits, and empty profeſſions, for the more ſubſtantial enjoyments of life.

We paſſed our time very agreeably, in various amuſements, with this friend of Mr. S——, until the term of my reckoning was almoſt expired, then returned to London, and took lodgings in Southampton-ſtreet, where I began to make preparations for the approaching occaſion. Here I propoſed to live with the utmoſt circumſpection. I diſguiſed my name, ſaw nobody but my lawyer and lover, and never approached the window, leſt I ſhould be diſcovered by accident.

Notwithſtanding theſe precautions, my French maid, whom I had ſent for ſome of my cloaths, was dogged in her return, and next morning my lord took my lodgings by ſtorm. Had he given the aſſault in his own perſon only, I make no doubt but he would have ſuffered a repulſe, from the oppoſition of the Ligeoiſe, who made all the reſiſtance in her power, but was obliged to give way to ſuperior number.

I was at that time abed, and hearing an unuſual noiſe below, rung my bell, in order to

know the cauſe of ſuch diſturbance. I drew my curtain at the ſame time, and who ſhould I ſee entering my chamber but his lordſhip, attended by a conſtable, and the footman who had detected my retreat!

Such an unexpected viſit could not fail to affect me with ſurprize and conſternation: however, I ſummoned all my fortitude to my aid, and perceiving the fellows were about to open my window-ſhutters, deſired their principal to order them down ſtairs. He readily complied with my requeſt, and ſitting down by my bed-ſide, told me with an air of triumph, that he had found me at laſt; and I frankly owned, that I was heartily ſorry for his ſucceſs. Inſtead of upbraiding me with my eſcape, he proceeded to entertain me with all the news in town, and gave me a minute detail of every thing which had happened to him ſince our parting; among other articles of intelligence, giving me to underſtand, that he had challenged Mr. S——, who had refuſed to fight him, and was in diſgrace with the prince of W—— on that account.

But here his lordſhip did not ſtrictly adhere to the naked truth: he had indeed, before our departure for the country, gone to my lover, and inſiſted upon having ſatisfaction in Hyde-park, two days from the date of his demand, and at three o' clock in the afternoon; S—— believing him in earneſt, accepted the invitation; though he obſerved, that theſe affairs could not be diſcuſſed too ſoon, and wiſhed the time of meeting might be at an earlier hour. But his lordſhip did not chooſe to alter the circumſtances of his firſt propoſal; and when he went away, ſaid he ſhould

ſhould expect him at the appointed time and place, if it did not rain.

His antagoniſt gave me an account of the converſation, when I aſſured him the whole buſineſs would end in ſmoke. Accordingly, my lord ſent him a letter on Monday, deſiring that the aſſignation might be deferred till Thurſday, that he might have time to ſettle his affairs, and pay S— an hundred pounds, which he had formerly borrowed of him. When Thurſday came, he was favoured with another epiſtle, importing, that the challenger had changed his mind, and would ſeek ſatsifaction at law. Thus ended that heroic exploit, which his lordſhip now boaſted of with ſuch arrogant miſrepreſentation.

Whilſt he regaled me with theſe intereſting particulars, I was contriving a ſcheme to fruſtrate the diſcovery he had made; ſo that I did not contradict his aſſertions, but told him, that if he would go down ſtairs, I would riſe and come to breakfaſt. He conſented to this propoſal with great chearfulneſs; and I own, I was not a little ſurprized to find him, at this firſt interview, in as good humour, as if nothing had happened to interrupt the felicity of our matrimonial union.

It coſt me ſome invention to conceal my condition from his notice, being now within a week of the expected criſis: but I knew I had to do with a man of no great penetration, and ſucceeded in my attempt accordingly. We breakfaſted with great harmony, and I invited him to dinner, after having prevailed upon him to ſend away his myrmidons, whom, nevertheleſs, he ordered to return at eleven o'clock at night. We converſed together with great gaiety and mirth; and when I rallied him for viſiting me in

ſuch a diſhabille, he ſtood a-tiptoe to view himſelf in the glaſs; and owning I was in the right, ſaid he would go and dreſs himſelf before dinner.

He accordingly went away, charging my maid to give him entrance at his return; and he was no ſooner gone than I wrote to Mr. S——, giving him an account of what had happened; then, without having determined upon any certain plan, huddled on my cloaths, muffled myſelf up, and calling a chair, went to the next tavern, where I ſtayed no longer than was ſufficient to change my vehicle; and, to the aſtoniſhment of the drawers, who could not conceive the meaning of my perturbation, proceeded to a ſhop in the neighbourhood, where I diſmiſſed my ſecond chair, and procured an hackney coach, in which I repaired to the lodgings of my lawyer, whom I could truſt. Having made him acquainted with the circumſtances of my diſtreſs, and conſulted him about a proper place of retreat, after ſome recollection he directed me to a little houſe in a court, to which, by the aſſiſtance of my lover, my woman and cloaths were ſafely conveyed that ſame evening.

My lord, however, came to dinner, according to invitation, and did not ſeem at all alarmed when my maid told him I was gone, but ſtepped to my lawyer, to know if he thought I ſhould return; and upon his anſwering in the affirmative, and adviſing his lordſhip to go back in the mean time, and eat the dinner I had provided, he very deliberately took his advice, made a very hearty meal, drank his bottle of wine, and, as I did not return, according to his expectation, withdrew, in order to conſult his aſſociates.

This

This motion of his furniſhed my woman with an opportunity of making her retreat; and when he returned at night, the coaſt was clear, and he found no body in the houſe but a porter, who had been left to take care of the furniture. He was ſo enraged at this diſappointment, that he made a furious noiſe, which raiſed the whole neighbourhood, reinforced his crew with the authority of a juſtice of the peace, tarried in the ſtreet till three o'clock in the morning, diſcharged a lodging he had hired at a barber's ſhop, oppoſite to the houſe from which I had eſcaped, and retired with the comfortable reflexion of having done every thing which man could do to retrieve me.

The hurry of ſpirits, and ſurprize I had undergone in effecting this retreat, produced ſuch a diſorder in my conſtitution, that I began to fear I ſhould be delivered before I could be provided with neceſſaries for the occaſion. I ſignified my apprehenſion to Mr. S——, who with infinite care and concern endeavoured to find a more convenient place; and, after all his inquiries, was obliged to fix upon a paultry apartment in the city, tho' his tenderneſs was extremely ſhocked at the neceſſity of chooſing it. However, there was no remedy, nor time to be loſt: to this miſerable habitation I was carried in an hackney coach; and, tho' extremely ill, bore my fate with ſpirit and reſignation, in teſtimony of my ſincere and indelible attachment to my lover, for whoſe eaſe and pleaſure I could have ſuffered every inconvenience, and even ſacrificed my life.

Immediately after I had taken poſſeſſion of my wretched apartment, I was conſtrained by my in-

diſpoſition to go to bed, and ſend for the neceſſary help; and in a few hours a living pledge of my love and indiſcretion ſaw the light, tho' the terrors and fatigue I had undergone had affected this little innocent ſo ſeverely, that it ſcarce diſcovered any viſible ſigns of life.

My grief at this misfortune was inexpreſſible: I forthwith diſpatched a meſſage to the dear, the anxious father, who flew to my arms, and ſhared my ſorrow, with all the gentleneſs of love and parental fondneſs; yet our fears were happily diſappointed by the recovery of our infant daughter, who was committed to the charge of a nurſe in the neighbourhood; ſo that I could every day be ſatisfied in my inquiries about her health. Thus I continued a whole fortnight, in a ſtate of happineſs and tranquillity, being bleſſed with the converſation and tender offices of my admirer, whoſe love and attention I wholly ingroſſed. In a word, he gave up all buſineſs and amuſement, and concentred all his care and aſſiduity in miniſtring to my eaſe and ſatisfaction. And ſure I had no cauſe to regret what I had ſuffered on his account.

But this my agreeable ſituation was one day diſturbed by a moſt alarming accident, by which my life was drawn into imminent danger. The room under my bed-chamber took fire; I immediately ſmelled it, and ſaw the people about me in the utmoſt perplexity and conſternation, tho' they would not own the true cauſe of their confuſion, leſt my health ſhould ſuffer in the fright. Nevertheleſs I was ſo calm in my inquiries, that they ventured to tell me my ſuſpicion was but too juſt: upon which I gave ſuch directions as I thought would ſecure me from catching cold, in

caſe there ſhould be a neceſſity for removing me; but the fire being happily extinguiſhed, I eſcaped that ceremony, which might have coſt me my life. Indeed it was ſurpriſing, that the agitation of my ſpirits did not produce ſome fatal effect upon my conſtitution; and I looked upon my deliverance as the protection of a particular providence.

Tho' I eſcaped the hazard of a ſudden removal, I found it was high time to change my lodgings, becauſe the neighbours ruſhing into the houſe, upon the alarm of fire, had diſcovered my ſituation, though they were ignorant of my name; and I did not think myſelf ſafe, in being the ſubject of their conjectures. Mr. S— therefore procured another apartment, with better accommodation, to which I was carried, as ſoon as my health would admit of my removal; and ſoon after my lord wrote to me, by the hands of my lawyer, earneſtly intreating me to drop my proſecution, and come home. But I would not comply with his requeſt; and nothing was farther from my intention than the deſire of receiving any favours at his hands.

Thus repulſed, he ſet on foot a moſt accurate ſearch for my perſon; in the courſe of which he is ſaid to have detected ſeveral ladies and young girls, who had reaſons for keeping themſelves concealed; and had like to have been very ſeverely handled for his impertinent curioſity. Being unſucceſsful in all his attempts, he entered into treaty with one Sir R— H—, a perſon of a very indifferent character, who undertook to furniſh him with an infallible expedient to diſcover the place of my abode, if he would gratify him with a bond for a thouſand pounds; which being executed accordingly, this worthy knight advertiſed

vertiſed me and my maid in the public papers, offering one hundred pounds as a reward to any perſon who ſhould diſcloſe the place of our retirement.

As ſoon as the paper fell into my hands I was again involved in perplexity; and being afraid of ſtaying in town, reſolved, with the concurrence of my lover, to accept of an invitation I had received from the duke of K—, who had by this time arrived in England, with that lady whom I have already mentioned, as one of our parties at Paris. Having viſited my little infant, I next day ſet out for the duke's country-ſeat, which is a moſt elegant *chateau*, and ſtands in a charming ſituation: Mr. S— followed in a few days; we met with a very cordial reception; his grace was civil and good-natured, lived nobly and loved pleaſure; Madam la T—— was formed to pleaſe: there was always a great deal of good company in the houſe; ſo that we paſſed our time agreeably in playing at billiards and cards, hunting, walking, reading and converſation.

But my terms of happineſs were generally of ſhort duration. In the midſt of all this felicity I was overtaken by a moſt ſevere affliction, in the death of my dear hapleſs infant, who had ingroſſed a greater ſhare of my tenderneſs than perhaps I even ſhould have paid to the offspring of a legitimate contract, becauſe the circumſtance of her birth would have been an unſurmountable misfortune to her thro' the whole courſe of her life, and rendered her abſolutely dependent on my love and protection.

While I ſtill lamented the untimely fate of this fair bloſſom, lord —— came down, and demanded me as his wife; but the ſuit which I then

maintained againſt him deprived him, for the preſent, of an husband's right; and therefore the duke would not deliver me into his hands.

In ſix months he repeated his viſit and demand; and an agreement was patched up, in conſequence of which I conſented to live in the ſame houſe with him, on condition that he ſhould never deſire to ſleep with me, or take any other meaſure to diſturb my peace; otherwiſe I ſhould be at liberty to leave him again, and intitled to the proviſion of a ſeparate maintenance. To theſe articles I aſſented, by the advice of my lawyers, with a view of obtaining the payment of my pin-money, which I had never received ſince our parting, but ſubſiſted on the ſale of my jewels, which were very conſiderable, and had been preſented to me with full power of alienation. As to my lover, he had no fortune to ſupport me; and for that reaſon I was ſcrupulouſly cautious of augmenting his expence.

We had now enjoyed each other's company for three years, during which our mutual paſſion had ſuffered no abatement, nor had my happineſs been mixed with any conſiderable allay, except that late ſtroke of providence which I have already mentioned, and the reflexion of the ſorrow that my conduct had intailed upon my dear father, whom I loved beyond expreſſion, and whom nothing could have compelled me to diſoblige but a more powerful flame, that prevailed over every other conſideration. As I was now forced to break off this inchanting correſpondence, it is not to be doubted that our parting coſt us the moſt acute ſenſations of grief and diſappointment. However, there was no remedy: I tore myſelf from his arms, took my leave of the family, after hav-

having acknowledged my obligations to the duke, and ſet out for the place of rendezvous, where I was met by my lord, attended by a ſteward whom he had lately engaged, and who was one chief cauſe of our future ſeparations. My lord having quitted his houſe in town, conducted me to his lodgings in Pall-Mall, and inſiſted upon ſleeping with me the firſt night; but I refuſed to gratify his deſire, on the authority of our agreement.

This diſpute produced a quarrel, in conſequence of which I attempted to leave the houſe; and he endeavouring to prevent my retreat, I fairly locked him in, ran down ſtairs, and calling a hackney coach, made the beſt of my way into the city, to my father's lodgings, where I lay, the family being in town, tho' he himſelf was in the country. I wrote to him immediately, and when he came to London, declared my intention of ſeparating from my lord, with which, ſeeing me obſtinate and determined, he at length acquieſced, and a formal ſeparation accordingly enſued, which at that time I thought binding and immutable.

I was now ſheltered under the wings of an indulgent father, who had taken me into favour again, on the ſuppoſition that my commerce with Mr. S— was abſolutely at an end. Nevertheleſs, tho' we had ſeparated, in all appearance, for ever, we had previouſly agreed to maintain our correſpondence in private interviews, which ſhould eſcape the notice of the world, with which I was again obliged to keep ſome meaſures.

Our parting at the duke of K—'s houſe in the country was attended with all the genuine marks of ſincere and reciprocal affection, and I lived in the

the ſweet hope of ſeeing him again, in all the tranſport of his former paſſion, when my lawyer, who received my letters, brought me a billet one night, juſt as I had gone to bed. Seeing the ſuperſcription of S—'s hand-writing, I opened it with all the impatience of an abſent lover; but how ſhall I deſcribe the aſtoniſhment and conſternation with which I was ſeized, when I peruſed the contents! Inſtead of the moſt tender vows and proteſtations, this fatal epiſtle began with, *Madam, the beſt thing you can do is to return to your father*; or ſome cold and killing expreſſion, to that effect.

Heaven and earth! what did I feel at this dire conjuncture! The light forſook my eyes, a cold ſweat bedewed my limbs, and I was overwhelmed with ſuch a torrent of ſorrow and ſurprize, that every body preſent believed I would have died under the violent agitation. They endeavoured to ſupport my ſpirits with repeated draughts of ſtrong liquor, which had no ſenſible effect upon my conſtitution, tho' for eight whole years I had drank nothing ſtronger than water; and I muſt have infallibly periſhed in the firſt extaſy of my grief, had it not made its way in a fit of tears and exclamation, in which I continued all night, to the amazement of the family, whom my condition had alarmed, and raiſed from their repoſe. My father was the only perſon who gueſſed the cauſe of my affliction; he ſaid he was ſure I had received ſome ill uſage in a letter or meſſage from that raſcal S— (ſo he termed him in the bitterneſs of paſſion).

At mention of that name my agony redoubled to ſuch a degree, that all who were preſent wept at ſight of my deplorable condition. My poor father

father ſhed a flood of tears, and conjured me to tell him the cauſe of my diſquiet: upon which, rather than confeſs the truth, I amuſed his concern, by pretending that my lover was ill. The whole family having ſtayed by me till I was a little more compoſed, left me to the care of my maid, who put me into bed about ſix in the morning; but I enjoyed no reſt: I revolved every circumſtance of my conduct, endeavouring to find out the cauſe of this fatal change in S—'s diſpoſition; and as I could recollect nothing which could juſtly give offence, concluded that ſome malicious perſons had abuſed his ears with ſtories to my prejudice.

With this conjecture I got up, and ſent my lawyer to him with a letter, wherein I inſiſted upon ſeeing him, that I might have an opportunity of juſtifying myſelf in perſon; a taſk which would be eaſily performed, as I had never offended, but in loving too well. I waited with the moſt anxious impatience for the return of my meſſenger, who brought me an anſwer couched in the coldeſt terms of civility which indifference could dictate; acknowledging, however, that he had nothing to lay to my charge, but that it was for the good of us both we ſhould part.—He ought to have reflected on that before, not after I had ſacrificed my all for his love! I was well nigh diſtracted by this confirmation of his inconſtancy; and I wonder to this day how I retained the uſe of reaſon, under ſuch circumſtances of horror and deſpair! My grief laid aſide all decorum and reſtraint; I told my father that S— was dying, and that I would viſit him with all expedition.

Startled

Startled at the propoſal, this careful parent demonſtrated the fatal conſequence of ſuch an unguarded ſtep, reminded me of the difficulty with which he had prevailed upon my mother and uncle to forgive my former imprudence, obſerved that his intention was to carry me into the country next day, in order to effect a perfect reconciliation; but now I was on the brink of forfeiting all pretenſions to their regard, by committing another fatal error, which could not poſſibly be retrieved; and that for his part, whatever pangs it might coſt him, he was reſolved to baniſh me from his ſight for ever.

While he uttered this declaration the tears trickled down his cheeks, and he ſeemed overwhelmed with the keeneſt ſorrow and mortification; ſo it may be eaſily conceived what were the impreſſions of my grief, reinforced with the affliction of a father whom I dearly loved, and the conſciouſneſs of being the cauſe of all his diſquiet! I was ſtruck dumb with remorſe and woe; and when I recovered the uſe of ſpeech, I told him how ſenſible I was of his great goodneſs and humanity, and owned how little I deſerved his favour and affection; that the ſenſe of my own unworthineſs was one cauſe of my preſent diſtraction; for ſuch was the condition of my fate, that I muſt either ſee S— or die. I ſaid, tho' I could not expect his forgiveneſs, I was ſurely worthy of his compaſſion; that nothing but the moſt irreſiſtible paſſion could have miſled me at firſt from my duty, or tempted me to incur the leaſt degree of his diſpleaſure; that the ſame fatal influence ſtill prevailed, and would, in all probability, continue to the grave, which was the only abode in which I hoped for peace.

While

While I expreſſed myſelf in this manner, my dear good father wept with the moſt tender ſympathy, and ſaying I might do as I pleaſed, for he had done with me, quitted the room, leaving me to the cruel ſenſations of my own heart, which almoſt burſted with anguiſh, upbraiding me with a fault which I could not help committing.

I immediately hired a chariot and ſix, and would have ſet out by myſelf, had not my father's affection, which all my errors could not efface, provided an attendant. He ſaw me quite delirious and deſperate; and therefore engaged a relation of my own to accompany and take care of me in this raſh expedition.

During this journey, which laſted two days, I felt no remiſſion of grief and anxiety, but underwent the moſt intolerable ſorrow and ſuſpenſe: at laſt we arrived at a little houſe called the Hut, on Saliſbury plain, where, in the moſt frantic agitation, I wrote a letter to S—, deſcribing the miſerable condition to which I was reduced by his unkindneſs, and deſiring to ſee him, with the moſt earneſt ſollicitations.

This billet I committed to the care of my attendant, and laid ſtrong injunctions upon him to tell Mr. S——, my injuries were ſo great, and my deſpair ſo violent, that if he did not favour me with a viſit, I would go to him, though at his ſiſter's houſe, where he then was.

He received my meſſage with great coldneſs, and told my friend, that if I would return to London, without inſiſting upon the interview I demanded, he would in a little time follow me to town, and every thing ſhould be amicably adjuſted. But when the meſſenger aſſured him, that I was too much tranſported with grief, to

hear

hear of ſuch a propoſal, he conſented to meet me in the middle of Saliſbury-plain, that we might avoid all obſervation: and though I was little able to walk, I ſet out on foot for the place of aſſignation, my companion following at a ſmall diſtance.

When I ſaw him leading his horſe down the hill, I collected all my fortitude, and advanced to him with all the ſpeed I could exert; but when I made an effort to ſpeak, my tongue denied its office; and ſo lively was the expreſſion of unutterable ſorrow in my countenance, that his heart (hard as it was) melted at ſight of my ſufferings, which he well knew proceeded from the ſincerity of my love. At length I recovered the uſe of ſpeech, enough to tell him, that I was come to take my leave; and when I would have proceeded, my voice failed me again: but, after a conſiderable pauſe, I found means, with great difficulty, to let him know how ſenſible I was of my own incapacity to retrieve his loſt affections; but that I was willing (if poſſible) to retain his eſteem, of which, could I be aſſured, I would endeavour to compoſe myſelf; that I was determined to leave the kingdom, becauſe I could not bear the ſight of thoſe places where we had been ſo happy in our mutual love; and that, till my departure, I hoped he would viſit me ſometimes, that I might, by degrees, wean myſelf from his company; for, I ſhould not be able to ſurvive the ſhock of being deprived of him all at once.

This addreſs may ſeem very humble to an unconcerned obſerver; but love will tame the proudeſt diſpoſition, as plainly appeared in my caſe; for I had naturally as much ſpirit, or more, than the generality of people have. Mr. S——

was

was ſo much confounded at the manner of my behaviour, that he ſcarce knew what anſwer to make; for (as he afterwards owned) he expected to hear himſelf upbraided; but he was not proof againſt my tenderneſs. After ſome heſitation, he ſaid he never meant to forſake me intirely, that his affection was ſtill unimpaired, and that he would follow me directly to London. I impoſed upon myſelf, and believed what he ſaid, becauſe I could not bear to think of parting with him for ever, and returned to town in a more tranquil ſtate of mind than that in which I had left my father, though my heart was far from being at eaſe; my fears being ingenious enough to foreſee, that I ſhould never be able to overcome his indifference.

I took lodgings in Mount-ſtreet, and my maid having diſpoſed of herſelf in marriage, hired another, who ſupplied her place very much to my ſatisfaction; ſhe was a good girl, had a particular attachment to me, and for many years, during which ſhe lived in my ſervice, was indefatigably aſſiduous in contributing to my eaſe, or rather, in alleviating my affliction: for, though S—— came up to town according to promiſe, and renewed a ſort of correſpondence with me for the ſpace of five months, his complaiſance would extend no farther; and he gave me to underſtand, that he had determined to go abroad with Mr. V——, whom he accordingly accompanied in his envoyſhip to D——n.

I underſtood the real cauſe of this expedition, which, notwithſtanding his oaths and proteſtations of unabated love and regard, I conſtrued into a palpable mark of diſlike and diſreſpect; nor could the repeated aſſurances I received from him in

in letters, mitigate the anguiſh and mortification that preyed upon my heart. I therefore gave up all hopes of recovering the happineſs I had loſt: I told him, on the eve of his departure, that he might exerciſe his gallantry a great while, before he would meet with my fellow, in point of ſincerity and love; for I would rather have been a ſervant in his houſe, with the privilege of ſeeing him, than the queen of England, debarred of that pleaſure.

When he took his leave, and went down ſtairs, I ſhrunk at every ſtep he made, as if a new wound had been inflicted upon me; and when I heard the door ſhut behind him, my heart died within me. (I had the ſatisfaction to hear afterwards, he lamented the loſs of me prodigiouſly, and that he had never been ſo happy ſince.) I ſat down to write a letter, in which I forgave his indifference, becauſe I knew the affections are altogether involuntary, and wiſhed him all the happineſs he deſerved. I then walked up and down the room in the moſt reſtleſs anxiety, was put to bed by my maid, roſe at ſix, mounted my horſe, and rode forty miles, in order to fatigue myſelf, that I might, next night, enjoy ſome repoſe. This exerciſe I daily underwent for months together; and when it did not anſwer my purpoſe, I uſed to walk round Hyde-park in the evening, when the place was quite ſolitary, and unviſited by any other human creature.

In the courſe of this melancholy perambulation, I was one day accoſted by a very great man, who, after the firſt ſalutation, aſked whether or not my intercourſe with S—— was at an end; and if I had any allowance from my huſband?

band? To the firſt of theſe queſtions I replied in the affirmative; and to the laſt anſwered, that my lord did not allow me a great deal; indeed I might have truly ſaid, nothing at all: but I was too proud to own my indigence. He then expreſſed his wonder, how one like me, who had been uſed to ſplendor and affluence from my cradle, could make ſhift to live in my preſent narrow circumſtances; and when I told him that I could make a very good ſhift, ſo I had peace, he ſeemed to lament my ſituation, and very kindly invited me to ſup with his wife, at his houſe. I accepted the invitation, without any apprehenſion of the conſequence; and when I went to the place, was introduced into an apartment, magnificently lighted up (I ſuppoſe) for my reception.

After I had ſtayed alone for ſome time in this myſterious ſituation, without ſeeing a living ſoul, my inviter appeared, and ſaid, he hoped I would not take it amiſs, that he and I were to ſup by ourſelves, as he had ſomething to ſay, which could not be ſo properly communicated before company or ſervants. I then, for the firſt time, perceived his drift, to my no ſmall ſurprize and indignation; and with evident marks of diſpleaſure told him, I was ſure he had nothing to propoſe that would be agreeable to my inclination, and that I would immediately leave the houſe. Upon which, he gave me to underſtand, that I could not poſſibly retire, becauſe he had ſent away my chair, and all his ſervants were diſpoſed to obey his orders.

Incenſed at this declaration, which I conſidered as an inſult, I anſwered with an air of reſolution, it was very well; I deſpiſed his contrivance, and

and was afraid of nobody. Seeing me thus alarmed, he aſſured me I had no reaſon to be afraid; that he had loved me long, and could find no other opportunity of declaring his paſſion. He ſaid, the Q— had told him, that lord C—— had renewed his addreſſes to me; and as he underſtood from my own mouth, my correſpondence with S—— was abſolutely broke off, he thought himſelf as well intitled as another to my regard. In concluſion, he told me, that I might command his purſe, and that he had power enough to bring me into the world again with *éclat*. To theſe advances I replied, that he was very much miſtaken in his opinion of my character, if he imagined I was to be won by any temptations of fortune, and very frankly declared, that I would rather give myſelf to a footman, than ſell myſelf to a prince.

Supper being ſerved, we ſat down together; but I would neither eat nor drink any thing, except a little bread and water; for I was an odd whimſical girl; and it came into my head, that he might, perhaps, have mixed ſomething in the victuals or wine, which would alter my way of thinking. In ſhort, finding himſelf baffled in all his endeavours, he permitted me, about twelve o'clock, to depart in peace, and gave up his ſuit, as a deſperate cauſe.

This uncomfortable life did I lead for a whole twelvemonth, without feeling the leaſt abatement of my melancholy; and finding myſelf worn to a ſkeleton, I reſumed my former reſolution of trying to profit by change of place, and actually went abroad with no other attendant but my woman, and the utmoſt indifference for life. My intention was to have gone to the South of

France, where I thought I could have ſubſiſted on the little I had left, which amounted to five hundred pounds, until the iſſue of my law-ſuit, by which I hoped to obtain ſome proviſion from my lord; and, without all doubt, my expectation would have been anſwered, had I put this my plan in execution: but being at Paris, from whence I purpoſed to ſet forward in a few days, I ſent to Mr. K———, who had been formerly intimate with my father, and ſhewn me many civilities during my firſt reſidence in France.

This gentleman favoured me with a viſit, and when I made him acquainted with my ſcheme, diſſuaded me from it, as an uncomfortable determination, and adviſed me to ſtay at Paris, where, with good œconomy, I could live as cheap as in any other place, and enjoy the converſation and countenance of my friends, among which number he declared himſelf one of the moſt faithful; aſſuring me, that I ſhould be always welcome to his table, and want for nothing; and promiſing to recommend me as a lodger to a friend of his, with whom I would live in a frugal and decent manner; and that, as the woman was well known and eſteemed by all the Engliſh company in Paris, it would be the moſt reputable ſtep I could take, (conſidering my youth and ſituation) to lodge with a creditable perſon, who could anſwer for my conduct. Thus perſuaded, I very ſimply followed his advice; I ſay ſimply, becauſe, notwithſtanding his repreſentations, I ſoon found my money melt away, without any proſpect of a freſh ſupply. In lieu of this, however, I paſſed my time very agreeably in ſeveral Engliſh, and ſome French families, where, in a little time,

time, I became quite intimate, ſaw a great deal of company, and was treated with the utmoſt politeneſs and regard; yet, in the midſt of theſe pleaſures, many a melancholy ſigh would riſe at the remembrance of my beloved S——, whom for ſeveral years I could not recollect without emotion; but time, company, amuſements, and change of place, in a great meaſure diſſipated theſe ideas, and enabled me to bear my fate with patience and reſignation.

On my laſt arrival at Paris, I was ſurrounded by a croud of profeſſed admirers, who ſighed and flattered in the uſual forms; but, beſides that my heart was not yet in a condition to contract new engagements, I was prepoſſeſſed againſt them all, by ſuppoſing that they preſumed upon the knowledge of my indiſcretion with S———; and therefore rejected their addreſſes with deteſtation and diſdain: for, as I have already obſerved, I was not to be won, but by the appearance of eſteem and the moſt reſpectful carriage; and though, by a falſe ſtep, I had, in my own opinion, forfeited my title to the one, I was reſolved to diſcourage the advances of any man who ſeemed deficient in the other.

In this manner, my lovers were, one by one, repulſed, almoſt as ſoon as they preſented themſelves, and I preſerved the independance of my heart, until I became acquainted with a certain peer, whom I often ſaw at the houſe of Mrs. P———, an Engliſh lady then reſident at Paris. This young nobleman profeſſed himſelf deeply enamoured of me, in a ſtile ſo different from that of my other admirers, that I heard his proteſtations without diſguſt; and though my inclinations were ſtill free, could not find in my heart to diſcountenance his addreſſes, which were pre-

ferred with the moſt engaging modeſty, diſintereſtedneſs and reſpect.

By theſe never-failing arts, he gradually conquered my indifference, and gained the preference in my eſteem from lord C——y and the prince of C——, who were at that time his rivals. But what contributed (more than any conſideration) to his ſucceſs, was his declaring openly, that he would marry me without heſitation, as ſoon as I could obtain a divorce from my preſent huſband, which, in all probability, might have been eaſily procured; for before I left England, lord —— had offered me five thouſand pounds, if I would conſent to ſuch a mutual releaſe, that he might be at liberty to eſpouſe one Miſs W—— of Kent, to whom he then made love upon honourable terms: but I was fool enough to refuſe his propoſal, by the advice of S——: and whether or not his lordſhip finding it impracticable to wed his new miſtreſs, began to make love upon another footing, I know not; but certain it is, the mother forbad him the houſe, a circumſtance which he took ſo heinouſly ill, that he appealed to the world in a public advertiſement, beginning with, *Whereas, for ſome time, I have paſſionately loved Miſs* W——, *and upon my not complying with the mother's propoſals, they have turned me out of doors; this is to juſtify*, &c.

This declaration, ſigned with his name, was actually printed in a number of detached advertiſements, which he ordered to be diſtributed to the public; and afterwards, being convinced by ſome of his friends, that he had done a very ſilly thing, he recalled them at half a guinea apiece. A copy of one of them was ſent to me at Paris; and I believe my father has now one of the originals in his poſſeſſion. After this wiſe vindication

tion of his conduct, he made an attempt to carry off the lady from church, by force of arms; but ſhe was reſcued by the neighbours, headed by her brother, who being an attorney, had like to have made his lordſhip ſmart ſeverely for this exploit.

Mean while, my new admirer had made ſome progreſs in my heart; and my finances being exhauſted, I was reduced to the alternative of returning to lord —— again, or accepting earl B——'s love. When my affairs were brought to that iſſue, I made no heſitation in my choice, putting myſelf under the protection of a man of honour, whom I eſteemed, rather than ſuffer every ſort of mortification, from a perſon who was the object of my abhorrence and contempt. From a miſtaken pride, I choſe to live in lord B——k's houſe, rather than be maintained at his expence in any other place. We ſpent ſeveral months agreeably in balls and other diverſions, viſited lord B—k, who lived at the diſtance of a few leagues from Paris, and ſtayed ſome days at his houſe, where the entertainment was, in all reſpects, delightful, elegant, and refined. Their habitation was the rendezvous of the beſt company in France; and lady B——k maintained the ſame ſuperiority in her own ſex, for which her lord is ſo juſtly diſtinguiſhed among the men.

About Chriſtmas we ſet out for England, accompanied by a little North Briton, who lived with lord B—— as his companion, and did not at all approve of our correſpondence; whether out of real friendſhip for his patron, or apprehenſion that in time I might ſuperſede his own influence with my lord, I ſhall not pretend to determine. Be that as it will, the froſt was ſo ſevere, that we were detained ten days at Calais, before we could get out of the harbour; and

during that time, I reflected ſeriouſly on what my new lover had propoſed: as he was very young, and unacquainted with the world, I thought my ſtory might have eſcaped him; and therefore determined to give him a faithful detail of the whole, that he might not have any thing to reproach me with in the ſequel; beſides, I did not think it honeſt to engage him to do more for me than he might afterwards, perhaps, think I was worth. Accordingly, I communicated to him every particular of my life; and the narration, far from altering his ſentiments, rather confirmed his good opinion, by exhibiting an undoubted proof of my frankneſs and ſincerity. In ſhort, he behaved with ſuch generoſity, as made an abſolute conqueſt of my heart: but my love was of a different kind from that which had formerly reigned within my breaſt, being founded upon the warmeſt gratitude and eſteem, excluſive of any other conſideration, though his perſon was very agreeable, and his addreſs engaging.

When we arrived in England, I went directly to his country-ſeat, about twelve miles from London, where he ſoon joined me, and we lived ſome time in perfect retirement, his relations being greatly alarmed with the apprehenſion that lord —— would bring an action againſt him; though he himſelf deſired nothing more, and lived ſo eaſily under that expectation, that they ſoon laid aſide their fears on his account.

We were viſited by Mr. H—— B——, a relation of my lord, and one Mr. R—— of the guards, who, with the little Scotch gentleman and my lover, made an agreeable ſet, among whom I enjoyed hunting, and all manner of country diverſions. As to Mr. H—— B——, if

if ever there was perfection in one man, it centered in him; or at leaſt, he, of all the men I ever knew, approached neareſt to that idea which I had conceived of a perfect character. He was both good and great, poſſeſſed an uncommon genius and the beſt of hearts. Mr. R— was a very ſociable man, had a good perſon and cultivated underſtanding; and my lord was exceſſively good humoured; ſo that, with ſuch companions, no place could be dull or inſipid: for my own part, I conducted the family; and as I endeavoured to pleaſe and make every body happy, I had the good fortune to ſucceed. Mr. B— told me, that before he ſaw me, he heard I was a fool; but finding (as he was pleaſed to ſay) that I had been egregiouſly miſrepreſented, he courted my friendſhip, and a correſpondence commenced between us: indeed, it was impoſſible for any perſon to know him, without entertaining the utmoſt eſteem and veneration for his virtue.

After I had lived ſome time in this agreeable retreat, my husband began to make a buſtle: he ſent a meſſage, demanding me from lord B——; then came in perſon, with his night-cap in his pocket, intending to have ſtayed all night, had he been aſked, and attended by a relation, whom he aſſured that I was very fond of him, and detained by force from his arms.

Finding himſelf diſappointed in his expectations, he commenced a law-ſuit againſt lord B—, though not for a divorce, as we deſired, but with a view to reclaim me as his lawful wife. His lawyers, however, attempted to prove criminal converſation, in hopes of extorting money from my lover; but their endeavours were alto-

gether fruitleſs; for no ſervant of lord B——'s or mine, could with juſtice ſay, we were ever ſeen to treſpaſs againſt modeſty and decorum; ſo that the plaintiff was nonſuited.

While this cauſe was depending, all my lover's friends expreſſed fear and concern for the iſſue, while he himſelf behaved with the utmoſt reſolution, and gave me ſuch convincing proofs of a ſtrong and ſteady affection, as augmented my gratitude, and rivetted the ties of my love, which was unblemiſhed, faithful and ſincere.

Soon after this event, I was ſeized with a violent fit of illneſs, in which I was viſited by my father, and attended by two phyſicians, one of whom deſpaired of my life, and took his leave accordingly; but Dr. S——, who was the other, perſiſted in his attendance, and, in all human appearance, ſaved my life; a circumſtance by which he acquired a great ſhare of reputation: yet, notwithſtanding all his aſſiſtance, I was confined to my bed for ten weeks; during which, lord B——'s grief was immoderate, his care and generoſity unlimited. Whilſt I lay in this extremity, Mr. S——, penetrated by my melancholy condition, which revived his tenderneſs, begg'd leave to be admitted to my preſence; and lord B—— would have complied with his requeſt, had I not been judged too weak to bear the ſhock of ſuch an interview. My conſtitution, however, agreeably diſappointed their fears; and the fever had no ſooner left me, than I was removed to a hunting-ſeat belonging to my lover, from whence, after I had recovered my ſtrength, we went to B—— Caſtle, where we kept open houſe: and while we remained at this place, lord B—— received a letter from lord ——, dated

in

in November, challenging him to ſingle combat in May, upon the frontiers of France and Flanders. This defiance was ſent in conſequence of what had paſſed betwixt them long before my indiſpoſition, at a meeting in a certain tavern, where they quarrelled, and in the fray my lover threw his antagoniſt under the table. I counſelled him to take no notice of this rhodomontade, which I knew was void of all intention of performance; and he was wiſe enough to follow my advice; reſolved, however, ſhould the meſſage be repeated, to take the challenger at his word.

Having reſided ſome time in this place, we returned to the other country-houſe which we had left, where lord B—— addicted himſelf ſo much to hunting, and other male diverſions, that I began to think he neglected me, and apprized him of my ſuſpicion; aſſuring him, at the ſame time, that I would leave him as ſoon as my opinion ſhould be confirmed.

This declaration had no effect upon his behaviour, which became ſo remarkably cold, that even Mr. R——, who lived with us, imagined that his affection was palpably diminiſhed. When I went to town, I was uſually attended by his couſin, or this gentleman, or both, but ſeldom favoured with his company; nay, when I repaired to Bath, for the re-eſtabliſhment of my health, he permitted me to go alone; ſo that I was quite perſuaded of his indifference; and yet, I was miſtaken in my opinion: but, I had been ſpoiled by the behaviour of my firſt husband, and Mr. S—, who never quitted me for the ſake of any amuſement, and often reſiſted the calls of the moſt urgent buſineſs, rather than part from me, tho' but for a few hours. I thought every man who

loved me truly, would act in the ſame manner; and whether I am right or wrong in my conjectures, I leave wiſer caſuiſts to judge. Certain it is, ſuch ſacrifice and devotion is the moſt pleaſing proof of an admirer's paſſion; and *Voyez moi plus ſouvent, & ne me donnez rien*, is one of my favourite maxims. A man may give money, becauſe he is profuſe; he may be violently fond, becauſe he is of a ſanguine conſtitution; but if he gives me his time, he gives me an unqueſtionable proof of my being in full poſſeſſion of his heart.

My appearance at Bath, without the company of lord B——, occaſioned a general ſurprize, and encouraged the men to peſter me with addreſſes; every new admirer endeavouring to advance his ſuit, by demonſtrating the unkind and diſreſpectful behaviour of his lordſhip. Indeed, this was the moſt effectual ſtring they could touch: my pride and reſentment were alarmed, and I was weak enough to liſten to one man, who had like to have inſinuated himſelf into my inclinations. He was tall and large boned, with white hair, inclining to what is called ſandy, and had the reputation of being handſome, tho' I think he ſcarce deſerved that epithet. He poſſeſſed a large fortune, loved miſchief, and ſtuck at nothing for the accompliſhment of his deſigns; one of his chief pleaſures, being that of ſetting any two lovers at variance. He employed his addreſs upon me with great aſſiduity, and knew ſo well how to manage my reſentment, that I was pleaſed with his manner, heard his vows without diſguſt, and, in a word, promiſed to deliberate with myſelf upon his propoſals, and give him an account of my determination in writing.

Thus

Thus reſolved, I went to lord B——, in Wiltſhire, whither I was followed by this pretender to my heart, who viſited us on the footing of an acquaintance; but when I reflected on what I had done, I condemned my own conduct, as indiſcreet, though nothing deciſive had paſſed between us, and began to hate him in proportion to the ſelf-conviction I felt; perceiving that I had involved myſelf in a difficulty from which I ſhould not be eaſily diſengaged. For the preſent, however, I found means to poſtpone my declaration; he admitted my excuſe, and I returned to London with lord B——, who was again ſummoned to the field by his former challenger.

H—d—n, governor, counſellor, and ſteward to this little hero, came to lord B—— with a verbal meſſage, importing, that his lordſhip had changed his mind about going to Flanders, but expected to meet him, on ſuch a day and hour, in the burying-ground near Red-lion-ſquare. Lord B—— accepted the challenge, and gave me an account of what had paſſed; but he had been anticipated by the meſſenger, who had already tried to alarm my fears, from the conſideration of the conſequence, that I might take ſome meaſures to prevent their meeting. But I perceived his drift, and told him plainly that lord —— had no intention to riſque his perſon, tho' he endeavoured with all his might to perſuade me, that his principal was deſperate and determined. I knew my little husband too well, to think he would bring matters to any dangerous iſſue, and was apprehenſive of nothing but foul play, from the villainy of H—n, with which I was equally well acquainted. Indeed I ſignified my doubts on that ſcore to Mr. B——, who would have attended

his kinſman to the field, had he not thought he might be liable to cenſure, if any thing ſhould happen to lord B——, becauſe he himſelf was heir at law: for that reaſon, he judiciouſly declined being perſonally concerned; and we pitched upon the earl of A—, his lordſhip's uncle, who willingly undertook the office.

At the appointed time they went to the place of rendezvous, where they had not waited long when the challenger appeared, in a new pink ſatin waiſtcoat, which he had put on for the occaſion, with his ſword under his arm, and his ſteward by him, leaving, in an hackney coach, at ſome diſtance, a ſurgeon whom he had provided for the care of his perſon. Thus equipped, he advanced to his antagoniſt, and deſired him to chooſe his ground; upon which lord B— told him, that if he muſt fall, it was not material which grave he ſhould tumble over.

Our little hero finding him ſo jocoſe and determined, turned to lord A—, and deſired to ſpeak with him, that he might diſburden his conſcience before they ſhould begin the work of death. They accordingly went aſide; and he gave him to underſtand, that his motive for fighting was lord B—'s detaining his wife from him, by compulſion. The earl of A— aſſured him, he was egregiouſly miſtaken in his conjecture; that his nephew uſed no force or undue influence, to keep me in his houſe; but it could not be expected that he would turn me out of doors.

This explanation was altogether ſatisfactory to lord —, who ſaid he was far from being ſo unreaſonable as to expect lord B— would commit ſuch a breach of hoſpitality; and all he deſired

ſired was, that his wife ſhould be left to her own inclinations. Upon theſe articles peace was concluded, and they parted without bloodſhed. At leaſt theſe are the particulars of the ſtory, as they were related by lord A——, with whom I laugh'd heartily at the adventure; for I never doubted that the challenger would find ſome expedient to prevent the duel, tho' I wondered how he muſtered up reſolution enough to carry it ſo far.

That he might not, however, give us any more trouble, we reſolved to go and enjoy ourſelves in France, whither I went by myſelf, in hopes of being ſoon joined by my lover, who was obliged to ſtay ſome time longer in England, to ſettle his affairs. He was ſo much affected at our parting (tho' but for a few weeks) that he was almoſt diſtracted; and this affliction renewed my tenderneſs for him, becauſe it was an undoubted proof of his love. I wrote to him every poſt from France; and, as I had no ſecrets, deſired him to take care of all the letters that ſhould come to his houſe, directed to me, after my departure from England.

This was an unfortunate office for him, in the execution of which he chanced to open a letter from Sir T— A—, with whom (as I have already obſerved) I had ſome correſpondence at Bath. I had, according to my promiſe, given this gentleman a deciſive anſwer, importing, that I was determined to remain in my preſent ſituation; but as lord B— was ignorant of my ſentiments in that particular, and perceived from the letter that ſomething extraordinary had paſſed between us, and that I was earneſtly ſollicited to leave him, he was ſeized with the utmoſt conſternation and concern; and having previouſly obtained

tained the king's leave to go abroad, ſet out that very night for France, leaving his affairs in the greateſt confuſion.

Sir T— A— hearing I was gone, without underſtanding the cauſe of my departure, took the ſame rout, and both arrived at Dover next day. They heard of each other's motions: each bribed the maſter of a packet-boat to tranſport him with expedition; but that depending upon the wind, both reached Calais at the ſame time, tho' in different veſſels. Sir T— ſent his valet de chambre, poſt, with a letter, intreating me to accompany him into Italy, where he would make me miſtreſs of his whole fortune, and to ſet out directly for that country, that he might not loſe me by the arrival of lord B—, promiſing to join me on the road, if I would conſent to make him happy. I ſent his meſſenger back with an anſwer, wherein I expreſſed ſurprize at his propoſals, after having ſignified my reſolution to him before I left England; and he was ſcarce diſmiſſed, when I received another letter from lord B—, beſeeching me to meet him at Clermont, upon the road from Calais; and conjuring me to avoid the ſight of his rival, ſhould he get the ſtart of him in travelling. This, however, was not likely to be the caſe, as lord B— rode poſt, and the other was, by his corpulence, obliged to travel in a chaiſe; yet, that I might not increaſe his anxiety, I left Paris immediately on the receit of his meſſage, and met him at the appointed place, where he received me with all the agitation of joy and fear, and aſked if I had ever encouraged Sir T— A— in his addreſſes. I very candidly told him the whole tranſaction, at which he was incenſed; but his indignation was

ſoon

ſoon appeaſed, when I profeſſed my penitence, and aſſured him, that I had totally rejected his rival. Not that I approve of my behaviour to Sir T— who (I own) was ill uſed in this affair; but ſurely it was more excuſable to halt here, than proceed farther in my indiſcretion.

My lover being ſatisfied with my declaration, we went together to Paris, being attended by the Scotchman whom I have already mentioned, tho' I believe he was not over and above well pleaſed to ſee matters thus amicably compromiſed. The furious knight followed us to the capital; inſiſted upon ſeeing me in perſon; told this North Briton, that I was actually engaged to him; wrote every hour, and railed at my perfidious conduct. I took no notice of theſe delirious tranſports, which were alſo diſregarded by lord B—, till one night he was exaſperated by the inſinuations of Mr. C—, who, I believe, inflamed his jealouſy, by hinting a ſuſpicion that I was really in love with his rival. What paſſed betwixt them I know not, but he ſent for me from the opera, by a phyſician of Paris, who was a ſort of go-between among us all, and who told me, that if I did not come home on the inſtant, a duel would be fought on my account.

I was very much ſhocked at this information; but by being uſed to alarms from the behaviour of lord —, I had acquired a pretty good ſhare of reſolution, and with great compoſure entered the room where lord B— was, with his companion, whom I immediately ordered to withdraw. I then gave his lordſhip to underſtand, that I was informed of what had paſſed, and thought myſelf ſo much injured by the perſon who had juſt

quitted the apartment, that I would no longer live under the ſame roof with him.

Lord B— raved like a bedlamite, taxing me with want of candour and affection; but I eaſily juſtified my own integrity, and gave him ſuch aſſurances of my love, that his jealouſy ſubſided, and his ſpirits were recompoſed. Nevertheleſs I inſiſted upon his diſmiſſing Mr. C—, on pain of my leaving the houſe, as I could not help thinking he had uſed his endeavours to prejudice me in the opinion of my lord. If his conduct was the reſult of friendſhip for his patron, he certainly acted the part of an honeſt and truſty adherent. But I could not eaſily forgive him, becauſe, a few weeks before, he had, by my intereſt, obtained a conſiderable addition to his allowance; and even after the ſteps he had taken to diſoblige me, I was not ſo much his enemy but that I prevailed upon lord B— to double his ſalary, that his leaving the family might be no detriment to his fortune.

His lordſhip having complied with my demand, this gentleman, after having ſtayed three days in the houſe, to prepare for his departure, during which I would not ſuffer him to be admitted into my preſence, made his retreat with a fine young girl who was my companion; and I have never ſeen him ſince that time.

Sir T— ſtill continued furious, and would not take a denial, except from my own mouth; upon which, with the approbation of lord B—, I indulged him with an interview. He entered the apartment with a ſtern countenance, and told me I had us'd him ill. I pleaded guilty to the charge, and begg'd his pardon accordingly. I attempted to reaſon the caſe with him, but he would

would hear no arguments except his own, and even tried to intimidate me with threats; which provoked me to ſuch a degree, that I defied his vengeance, telling him that I feared nothing but the reproach of my own conſcience; that tho' I had acted a ſimple part, he durſt not ſay there was any thing criminal in my conduct; and that, from his preſent frantic and unjuſt behaviour, I thought myſelf happy in having eſcaped him. He ſwore I was the moſt inflexible of all creatures, aſked if nothing would move me? and when I anſwered, "Nothing," took his leave, and never afterwards perſecuted me with his addreſſes; tho' I have heard he was vain and falſe enough to boaſt of favours, which, upon my honour, he never received, as he himſelf, at one time, owned to doctor Cantwell at Paris.

While he underwent all this frenzy and diſtraction upon my account, he was loved with the ſame violence of paſſion by a certain Scotch lady of quality, who, when he followed me to France, purſued him thither with the ſame eagerneſs and expedition; and, far from being jealous of me as a rival, us'd to come to my houſe, implore my good offices with the object of her love, and laying herſelf on the floor at full length, before the fire, weep and cry like a perſon bereft of her ſenſes. She bitterly complained, that he had never obliged her but once; and begg'd, with the moſt earneſt ſupplications, that I would give her an opportunity of ſeeing him at my houſe. But I thought proper to avoid her company, as ſoon as I perceived her intention.

We continued at Paris for ſome time, during which I contracted an acquaintance with the ſiſter

ſiſter of madam la T—. She was the ſuppoſed miſtreſs of the prince of C—, endowed with a great ſhare of underſtanding, and loved pleaſure to exceſs, tho' ſhe maintained her reputation on a reſpectable footing, by living with her huſband and mother. This lady, perceiving that I had inſpired her lover with a paſſion, which gave me uneaſineſs on her account, actually practiſed all her eloquence and art, in perſuading me to liſten to his love; for it was a maxim with her, to pleaſe him at any rate. I was ſhocked at her indelicate complaiſance, and rejected the propoſal, as repugnant to my preſent engagement, which I held as ſacred as any nuptial tie, and much more binding than a forced or unnatural marriage.

Upon our return to England we lived in great harmony and peace; and nothing was wanting to my happineſs, but the one thing to me moſt needful; I mean the inchanting tenderneſs and delightful enthuſiaſm of love. Lord B—'s heart (I believe) felt the ſoft impreſſions; and, for my own part, I loved him with the moſt faithful affection. It is not enough to ſay I wiſhed him well; I had the moſt delicate, the moſt genuine eſteem for his virtue, I had an intimate regard and anxiety for his intereſt, and felt for him as if he had been my own ſon: but ſtill there was a vacancy in my heart; there was not that fervour, that tranſport, that ecſtaſy of paſſion which I had formerly known; my boſom was not filled with the little deity; I could not help recalling to my remembrance the fond, the raviſhing moments I had paſſed with S—; and had I underſtood the conditions of life, thoſe pleaſures were happily exchanged for my preſent ſituation, becauſe, if

I

I was now deprived of thoſe rapturous enjoyments, I was alſo exempted from the cares and anxiety that attended them; but I was generally extravagant in my notions of happineſs, and therefore conſtrued my preſent tranquillity into an inſipid languor and ſtagnation of life.

While I remained in this inactivity of ſentiment, lord —— having received a very conſiderable addition to his fortune, ſent a meſſage to me, promiſing, that if I would leave lord B—, he would make me a preſent of an houſe and furniture, where I ſhould live at my eaſe, without being expoſed to his viſits, except when I ſhould be diſpoſed to receive them. This propoſal he made, in conſequence of what I had always declared, namely, that if he had not reduced me to the neceſſity of putting myſelf under the protection of ſome perſon or other, by depriving me of any other means of ſubſiſtence, I ſhould never have given the world the leaſt cauſe to ſcandalize my reputation; and that I would withdraw myſelf from my preſent dependance, as ſoon as he ſhould enable me to live by myſelf. I was therefore reſolved to be as good as my word, and accepted his offer, on condition that I ſhould be wholly at my own diſpoſal, and that he ſhould never enter my door but as a viſitant or common friend.

Theſe articles being ſanctioned by his word and honour (the value of which I did not then know) an houſe was furniſhed according to my directions; and I ſignified my intention to lord B—, who conſented to my removal, with this proviſo, that I ſhould continue to ſee him. I wrote alſo to his relation Mr. B—, who, in his anſwer, obſerved, that it was too late to adviſe when

when I was actually determined. All my friends and acquaintance approved of the ſcheme, tho' it was one of the moſt unjuſtifiable ſteps I had ever taken, being a real act of ingratitude to my benefactor; which I ſoon did, and always ſhall regret and condemn. So little is the world qualified to judge of private affairs!

When the time of our parting drew near, lord B— became gloomy and diſcontented, and even intreated me to poſtpone my reſolution; but I told him, that now every thing was prepared for my reception, I could not retract without incurring the imputation of folly and extravagance. On the very day of my departure Mr. B— endeavoured, with all the arguments he could ſuggeſt, to diſſuade me from my purpoſe; and I made uſe of the ſame anſwer which had ſatisfied his friend. Finding me determined upon removing, he burſt out into a flood of tears, exclaiming, "By G—d, if lord B—— can bear "it, I can't." I was thunderſtruck at this expreſſion; for tho' I had been told that Mr. B— was in love with me, I gave no credit to the report, becauſe he had never declared his paſſion, and this was the firſt hint of it that ever eſcaped him in my hearing. I was therefore ſo much amazed at the circumſtance of this abrupt explanation, that I could make no anſwer; but having taken my leave, went away, ruminating on the unforeſeen event.

Lord B— (as I was informed) ſpoke not a word that whole night, and took my leaving him ſo much to heart, that two years elapſed before he got the better of his grief. This intelligence I afterwards received from his own mouth, and aſked his forgiveneſs for my unkind retreat, tho'

I

I ſhall never be able to obtain my own. As for Mr. B—, he was overwhelmed with ſorrow, and made ſuch efforts to ſuppreſs his concern, as had well nigh coſt him his life. Dr. S— was called to him in the middle of the night, and found him almoſt ſuffocated. He ſoon gueſſed the cauſe, when he underſtood that I had left the houſe: ſo that I myſelf was the only perſon concerned who was utterly ignorant of his affection; for I ſolemnly declare he never gave me the leaſt reaſon to ſuſpect it while I lived with his relation, becauſe he had too much honour to entertain a thought of ſupplanting his friend, and too good an opinion of me to believe he ſhould have ſucceeded in the attempt. Tho' my love for lord B— was not ſo tender and intereſting as the paſſion I had felt for S——, my fidelity was inviolable, and I never harboured the moſt diſtant thought of any other perſon, till after I had reſolved to leave him, when (I own) I afforded ſome ſmall encouragement to the addreſſes of a new admirer, by telling him, that I ſhould, in a little time, be my own miſtreſs, tho' I was not now at my own diſpoſal.

I enjoyed my new houſe as a little paradiſe: it was accommodated with all ſorts of conveniences; every thing was new, and therefore pleaſing, and the whole abſolutely at my command. I had the company of a relation, a very good woman, with whom I lived in the moſt amicable manner; was viſited by the beſt people in town (I mean thoſe of the male ſex, the ladies having long ago forſaken me;) I frequented all reputable places of publick entertainment, and had a concert at home once a week: ſo that my days rolled on in happineſs and quiet, till all my

ſweets

ſweets were imbittered by the vexatious behaviour of my huſband, who began to importune me again to live with him; and by the increaſing anxiety of lord B—, who (tho' I ſtill admitted his viſits) plainly perceived that I wanted to relinquiſh his correſpondence. This diſcovery raiſed ſuch tempeſts of jealouſy and deſpair within his breaſt, that he kept me in continual alarms: he ſent meſſages to me every hour, ſigned his letters with his own blood, raved like a man in an ecſtaſy of madneſs, railed at my ingratitude, and praiſed my conduct, by turns; offered to ſacrifice every thing for my love, to leave the kingdom forthwith, and live with me for ever in any part of the world where I ſhould chooſe to reſide.

Theſe were generous and tempting propoſals; but I was beſet with counſellors who were not totally diſintereſted, and who diſſuaded me from embracing the proffers of my lover, on pretence that lord ——— would be highly injured by my compliance. I liſtened to their advice, and hardened my heart againſt lord B—'s ſorrow and ſolicitations. My behaviour on this occaſion is altogether unaccountable; this was the only time that ever I was a ſlave to admonition. The condition of lord B— would have melted any heart but mine, and yet mine was one of the moſt ſenſible: he employed his couſin as an advocate with me, till that gentleman actually refuſed the office, telling him candidly, that his own inclinations were too much engaged, to permit him to perform the taſk with fidelity and truth. He accordingly reſolved to avoid my preſence, until my lord and I ſhould come to ſome final determination, which was greatly retarded by the perſeve-

rance

rance of his lordſhip, who would not reſign his hopes even when I pretended that another man had engaged my heart, but ſaid, that in time my affection might return.

Our correſpondence, however, gradually wore off; upon which Mr. B— renewed his viſits, and many agreeable and happy hours we paſſed together. Not that he, or any other perſon whom I now ſaw, ſucceeded to the privilege of a fortunate lover: I knew he loved me to madneſs; but I would not gratify his paſſion any other way than by the moſt profound eſteem and veneration for his virtues, which were altogether amiable and ſublime; and I would here draw his character minutely, but it wou'd take up too much time to ſet forth his merits; the only man living of my acquaintance who reſembles him is lord F—, of whom I ſhall ſpeak in the ſequel.

About this time, I underwent a very intereſting change in the ſituation of my heart. I had ſent a meſſage to my old lover S——, deſiring he would allow my picture, which was in his poſſeſſion, to be copied; and he now tranſmitted it to me by my lawyer, whom he directed to aſk, if I intended to be at the next maſquerade. This curioſity had a ſtrange effect upon my ſpirits; my heart fluttered at the queſtion, and my imagination glowed with a thouſand fond preſages. I anſwered in the affirmative, and we met by accident at the ball. I could not behold him without emotion; when he accoſted me, his well-known voice made my heart vibrate, like a muſical chord, when its uniſon is ſtruck. All the ideas of our paſt love, which the lapſe of time and abſence had enfeebled and lulled aſleep, now awoke, and were reinſpired by his appearance; ſo that his artful

artful excuſes were eaſily admitted: I forgave him all that I had ſuffered on his account, becauſe he was the natural lord of my affection; and our former correſpondence was renewed.

I thought myſelf in a new world of bliſs, in conſequence of this reconciliation, the raptures of which continued unimpaired for the ſpace of four months, during which time he was fonder of me, if poſſible, than before, repeated his promiſe of marriage, if we ſhould ever have it in our power; aſſured me he had never been happy ſince he left me; that he believed no woman had ever loved like me: and indeed, to have a notion of my paſſion for that man, you muſt firſt have loved as I did: but, through a ſtrange caprice, I broke off the correſpondence, out of apprehenſion that he would forſake me again. From his paſt conduct, I dreaded what might happen; and the remembrance of what I had undergone by his inconſtancy, filled my imagination with ſuch horror, that I could not endure the ſhocking proſpect, and prematurely plunged myſelf into the danger, rather than endure the terrors of expectation. In conſequence of this deſertion, I received a letter from him, acknowledging that he was rightly ſerved, but that it gave him inexpreſſible concern.

Mean while, lord —— continued to act in the character of a fiend, tormenting me with his nauſeous importunities: he prevailed upon the duke of L—— to employ his influence in perſuading me to live with him; aſſuring his grace, that I had actually promiſed to give him that proof of my obedience, and that I would come home the ſooner for being preſſed to compliance by a perſon of his rank and character. Induced by theſe repreſentations, the duke honoured

noured me with a viſit; and in the courſe of his exhortations I underſtood how he had been thus miſinformed: upon which I ſent for lord ——, and in his preſence convicted him of the falſhood, by communicating to his grace the articles of our laſt agreement, which he did not think proper to deny; and the duke being undeceived, declared that he would not have given me the trouble of vindicating myſelf, had he not been miſled by the inſincerity of my lord.

Baffled in this attempt, he engaged Mr. H— V—, and afterwards my own father, in the ſame taſk; and tho' I ſtill adhered to my firſt reſolution, perſiſted with ſuch obſtinacy in his endeavours to make me unhappy, that I determined to leave the kingdom; and accordingly, after I had ſpent the evening with him at Ranelagh, I went away about two o'clock in the morning, leaving my companion, with directions to reſtore to my lord his houſe, furniture, plate, and every thing he had given me ſince our laſt accommodation; ſo far was I, upon this occaſion, or at any other time of my life, from embezzling any part of his fortune. My friend followed my inſtructions moſt punctually; and his lordſhip knows, and will acknowledge, the truth of this aſſertion.

Thus have I explained the true cauſe of my firſt expedition to Flanders, whither the world was good-natured enough to ſay I followed Mr. B—— and the whole army, which happened to be ſent abroad that ſummer. Before my departure I likewiſe tranſmitted to lord B— the dreſſing-plate, china, and a very conſiderable ſettlement, of which he had been generous enough to make me a preſent. This was an inſtance of my in-

tegrity, which I thought due to a man who had laid me under great obligations; and tho' I have lived to be refuſed a ſmall ſum both by him and S—, I do not repent of my diſintereſted behaviour; and all the revenge I harbour againſt the laſt of theſe lovers, is the deſire of having it in my power to do him good.

I now found myſelf adrift in the world again, and very richly deſerved the hardſhips of my condition, for my indiſcretion in leaving lord B—, and in truſting to the word of lord ——, without ſome farther ſecurity; but I have dearly paid for my imprudence. The more I ſaw into the character of this man whom deſtiny hath appointed my ſcourge, the more was I determined to avoid his fellowſhip and communication; for he and I are, in point of diſpoſition, as oppoſite as any two principles in nature. In the firſt place, he is one of the moſt unſocial beings that ever exiſted; when I was pleaſed and happy he was always out of temper, but if he could find means to overcaſt and cloud my mirth, tho' never ſo innocent, he then diſcovered the ſigns of uncommon ſatisfaction and content, becauſe, by this diſagreeable temper, he baniſhed all company from his houſe. He is extremely weak of underſtanding, tho' he poſſeſſes a good ſhare of low cunning, which has ſo egregiouſly impoſed upon ſome people, that they have actually believed him a good-natured eaſy creature, and blamed me becauſe I did not manage him to better purpoſe; but, upon further acquaintance, they have always found him obſtinate as a mule, and capricious as a monkey. Not that he is utterly void of all commendable qualities: he is punctual in paying his debts, liberal when in good

good humour, and would be well bred, were he not ſubject to fits of abſence, during which he is altogether unconverſable; but he is proud, naturally ſuſpicious, jealous, equally with and without cauſe, never made a friend, and is an utter ſtranger to the joys of intimacy; in ſhort, he hangs like a damp upon ſociety, and may be properly called *Kill-joy*, an epithet which he has juſtly acquired. He honours me with conſtant profeſſions of love, but his conduct is ſo oppoſite to my ſentiments of that paſſion, as to have been the prime ſource of all my misfortunes and affliction; and I have often wiſhed myſelf the object of his hate, in hopes of profiting by a change in his behaviour.

Indeed, he has not been able to make me more unhappy than, I believe, he is in his own mind; for he is literally a ſelf-tormentor, who never enjoyed one gleam of ſatisfaction, except at the expence of another's quiet; and yet with this (I had almoſt called it diabolical) quality, he expects that I ſhould cheriſh him with all the tenderneſs of affection; and after he has been at pains to incur my averſion, puniſhes my diſguſt, by contriving ſchemes to mortify and perplex me, which have often ſucceeded ſo effectually, as to endanger my life and conſtitution; for I have been fretted and frighted into ſundry fits of illneſs, and then I own I have experienced his care and concern.

Over and above the oddities I have mentioned, he is ſo unſteady in his œconomy, that he is always new modelling his affairs, and exhauſting his fortune, by laying out ten pounds, in order to ſave a ſhilling; he inquires into the character of a ſervant after he has lived two years in his family,

and is ſo ridiculouſly ſtocked with vanity and ſelf-conceit, that notwithſtanding my aſſurance before, and the whole ſeries of my conduct ſince our marriage, which ought to have convinced him of my diſlike, he is ſtill perſuaded, that at bottom, I muſt admire and be enamoured of his agreeable perſon and accompliſhments, and that I would not fail to manifeſt my love, were I not ſpirited up againſt him by his own relations. Perhaps it might be their intereſt to foment the miſunderſtanding betwixt us; but really, they give themſelves no trouble about our affairs; and, ſo far as I know them, are a very good ſort of people. On the whole, I think I may with juſtice pronounce my precious yoke-fellow a trifling, teazing, inſufferable, inconſiſtent creature.

With the little money which remained of what I had received from his lordſhip, for houſekeeping, I tranſported myſelf to Flanders, and arrived in Ghent, a few days after our troops were quartered in that city, which was ſo much crowded with theſe new viſitants, that I ſhould have found it impracticable to procure a lodging, had I not been accommodated by lord R— B—, the duke of A——'s youngeſt brother, who very politely gave me up his own. Here I ſaw my friend Mr. B——, who was overjoyed at my arrival, though jealous of every man of his acquaintance; for he loved me with all the ardour of paſſion, and I regarded him with all the perfection of friendſhip, which, had he lived, in time might have produced love; but it never did. Notwithſtanding his earneſt ſolicitations to the contrary, I ſtayed but a week in Ghent, from whence I proceeded to Bruſſels, and fixed my abode in the Hotel de Flandre, among an agreeable ſet of gen-

gentlemen and ladies, with whom I ſpent my time very chearfully. There being a ſort of court in this city, it was frequented by all the officers, who could obtain permiſſion to go thither; and the place in general was gay and agreeable. I was introduced to the beſt families, and very happy in my acquaintance; for the ladies were polite, good tempered, and obliging, and treated me with the utmoſt hoſpitality and reſpect. Among others, I contracted a friendſhip with Madam la comteſſe de C——, and her two daughters, who were very amiable young ladies; and became intimate with the princeſs C—— and counteſs W——, lady of the bedchamber to the queen of Hungary, and a great favourite of the governor Monſieur D'H——, in whoſe houſe ſhe lived with his wife, who was alſo a lady of a very engaging diſpoſition.

Soon after I had fixed my habitation in Bruſſels, the company at our Hotel was increaſed by three officers, who profeſſed themſelves my admirers, and came from Ghent, with a view of ſoliciting my love. This triumvirate conſiſted of the Scotch earl of ——, lord R— M—, and another young officer: the firſt was a man of a very genteel figure and amorous complexion, danced well, and had a great deal of good humour, with a mixture of vanity and ſelf-conceit. The ſecond had a good face, though a clumſy perſon, and a very ſweet diſpoſition, very much adapted for the ſentimental paſſion of love: and the third (Mr. W—— by name) was tall, thin, and well-bred, with a great ſtock of good nature and vivacity. Theſe adventurers began their addreſſes in general acts of gallantry, that comprehended ſeveral of my female friends, with

whom we uſed to engage in parties of pleaſure, both in the city and the *environs*, which are extremely agreeable; and when they thought they had taken the preliminary ſteps of ſecuring themſelves in my good opinion and eſteem, they agreed to go on without farther delay, and that lord —— ſhould make the firſt attack upon my heart.

He accordingly laid ſiege to me, with ſuch warmth and aſſiduity, that I believe he deceived himſelf, and began to think he was actually in love; though at bottom, he felt no impulſe that deſerved the ſacred name. Though I diſcouraged him in the beginning, he perſecuted me with his addreſſes; he always ſat by me at dinner, and imparted a thouſand trifles in continual whiſpers, which attracted the notice of the company ſo much, that I began to fear his behaviour would give riſe to ſome report to my prejudice; and therefore avoided him with the utmoſt caution. Notwithſtanding all my care, however, he found means one night, while my maid, who lay in my room, went down ſtairs, to get into my chamber after I was abed: upon which, I ſtarted up, and told him, that if he ſhould approach me, I would alarm the houſe; for I never wanted courage and reſolution. Perceiving my diſpleaſure, he kneeled by the bed-ſide, begg'd I would have pity on his ſufferings, and ſwore I ſhould have *carte blanche* to the utmoſt extent of his fortune. To theſe propoſals I made no other reply, but that of proteſting I would never ſpeak to him again, if he did not quit my apartment that moment; upon which, he thought proper to withdraw; and I never afterwards gave him an opportunity of ſpeaking to me on the ſame ſub-

ſubject: ſo that, in a few weeks, he ſeparated himſelf from our ſociety; though the ladies of Bruſſels conſidered him as my lover, becauſe, of all the other officers, he was their greateſt favourite.

His lordſhip being thus repulſed, Mr. W—— took the field, and aſſailed my heart in a very different manner. He ſaid, he knew not how to make love, but was a man of honour, would keep the ſecret, and ſo forth. To this cavalier addreſs I anſwered, that I was not angry, as I otherwiſe ſhould have been at his blunt declaration, becauſe I found, by his own confeſſion, he did not know what was due to the ſex; and my unhappy ſituation in ſome ſhape excuſed him for a liberty, which he would not have dream'd of taking, had not my misfortunes encouraged his preſumption. But I would deal with him in his own way; and far from aſſuming the prude, frankly aſſured him, that he was not at all to my taſte, hoping he would conſider my diſlike as a ſufficient reaſon to reject his love.

Lord R—— began to feel the ſymptoms of a genuine paſſion, which he carefully cheriſhed in ſilence, being naturally diffident and baſhful; but, by the very means he uſed to conceal it from my obſervation, I plainly diſcerned the ſituation of his heart, and was not at all diſpleaſed at the progreſs I had made in his inclinations. Mean while, he cultivated my acquaintance with great aſſiduity and reſpect, attended me in all my excurſions, and particularly in an expedition to Antwerp, with two other gentlemen, where, in downright *gaieté de cœur*, we ſat for our pictures, which were drawn in one piece; one of the parties being repreſented in the dreſs of an huſſar,

and another in that of a running footman. This incident I mention, becauſe the performance, which is now in my poſſeſſion, gave birth to a thouſand groundleſs reports, that circulated in England at our expence.

It was immediately after this jaunt, that lord R—— began to diſcloſe his paſſion; though he, at the ſame time, ſtarted ſuch objections as ſeemed well nigh to extinguiſh his hopes, lamenting, that even if he ſhould have the happineſs to engage my affections, his fortune was too inconſiderable to ſupport us againſt the efforts of lord ——, ſhould he attempt to interrupt our felicity; and that he himſelf was obliged to follow the motions of the army. In ſhort, he ſeemed to conſider my felicity more than his own, and behaved with ſuch delicacy, as gradually made an impreſſion on my heart; ſo that when we parted, we agreed to renew our correſpondence in England.

In the midſt of theſe agreeable amuſements, which I enjoyed in almoſt all the different towns of Flanders, I happened to be at Ghent one day, ſitting among a good deal of company, in one of their Hotels, when a poſt-chaiſe ſtopped at the gate; upon which we went to the windows to ſatisfy our curioſity, when who ſhould ſtep out of the convenience, but my little inſignificant lord. I no ſooner announced him to the company, than all the gentlemen aſked whether they ſhould ſtay and protect me, or withdraw; and when I aſſured them, that their protection was not neceſſary, one and all of them retired; though lord R—— M—— went no farther than the parlour below, being determined to ſcreen me againſt all violence and compulſion. I ſent a meſ-

meſſage to my lord, deſiring him to walk up into my apartment; but although his ſole errand was to ſee and carry me off, he would not venture to accept of my invitation, till he had demanded me in form, from the governor of the place.

That gentleman being altogether a ſtranger to his perſon and character, referred him to the commanding officer of the Engliſh troops, who was a man of humour, and upon his lordſhip's application, pretended to doubt his identity; obſerving, that he had always heard lord —— repreſented as a jolly corpulent man. He gave him to underſtand, however, that even granting him to be the perſon, I was by no means ſubject to military law, unleſs he could prove, that I had ever inliſted in his majeſty's ſervice.

Thus diſappointed in his endeavours, he returned to the inn, and, with much perſuaſion, truſted himſelf in my dining-room, after having ſtationed his attendant at the door, in caſe of accidents. When I aſked, what had procured me the honour of this viſit; he told me, his buſineſs and intention were to carry me home; and this declaration produced a conference, in which I argued the caſe with him; and matters were accommodated for the preſent, by my promiſing to be in England ſome time in September, on condition that he would permit me to live by myſelf, as before, and immediately order the arrears of my pin-money to be paid. He aſſented to every thing I propoſed, returned in peace to his own country, and the deficiencies of my allowance were made good; while I returned to Bruſſels, where I ſtayed until my departure for England, which I regulated in ſuch a manner as was conſiſtent with my engagement.

I took lodgings in Pall-mall, and ſending for my lord, convinced him of my punctuality, and put him in mind of his promiſe; when, to my utter aſtoniſhment and confuſion, he owned, that his promiſe was no more than a decoy to bring me over, and that I muſt lay my account with living in his houſe, like a dutiful and obedient wife. I heard him with the indignation ſuch treatment deſerved, upbraided him with his perfidious dealing, which I told him would have determined me againſt cohabitation with him, had I not been already reſolved: and being deſtitute of all reſource, repaired to Bath, where I afterwards met with Mr. D—— and Mr. R——, two gentlemen who had been my fellow-paſſengers in the yacht from Flanders, and treated me with great friendſhip and politeneſs, without either talking or thinking of love.

With theſe gentlemen, who were as idle as myſelf, I went to the jubilee at Preſton, which was no other than a great number of people aſſembled in a ſmall town extremely ill accommodated, to partake of diverſions that were bad imitations of plays, concerts, and maſquerades. If the world ſhould place to the account of my indiſcretion, my travelling in this manner, with gentlemen to whom I had no particular attachment; let it alſo be conſidered, as an alleviation, that I always lived in terror of my lord, and conſequently was often obliged to ſhift my quarters; ſo that my finances being extremely ſlender, I ſtood the more in need of aſſiſtance and protection. I was, beſides, young, inconſiderate, and ſo ſimple, as to ſuppoſe the figure of an ugly man would always ſecure me from cenſure on his account: neither did I ever dream of any

man's addreſſes, until he made an actual declaration of his love.

Upon my return to Bath, I was again harraſſed by lord ——, who came thither accompanied by my father, whom I was very glad to ſee, though he importuned me to comply with my huſband's deſire, and for the future keep meaſures with the world. This remonſtrance about living with my lord, which he conſtantly repeated, was the only inſtance of his unkindneſs which I ever felt. But all his admonitions were not of force ſufficient to ſhake my reſolution in that particular; though the debate continued ſo late, that I told his lordſhip, it was high time to retire, for I could not accommodate him with a bed. He then gave me to underſtand, that he would ſtay where he was; upon which my father took his leave, on pretence of looking out for a lodging to himſelf.

The little gentleman being now left *tête a tête* with me, began to diſcover ſome ſigns of apprehenſion in his looks; but muſtering up all his reſolution, he went to the door, called up three of his ſervants, whom he placed as centinels upon the ſtair, and flung himſelf in my elbow-chair, where he reſigned himſelf to reſt. Intending to go to bed, I thought it was but juſt and decent that I ſhould ſcreen myſelf from the intruſion of his footmen, and with that view bolted the door. Lord —— hearing himſelf locked in, ſtarted up in the utmoſt terror and conſternation, kicked the door with his heel, and ſcreamed aloud, as if he had been in the hands of an aſſaſſin. My father, who had not yet quitted the houſe, hearing theſe outcries, ran up ſtairs again, and coming through my bed-chamber, into the dining-room

where we were, found me almoſt ſuffocated with laughter, and his heroic ſon-in-law ſtaring like one who had loſt his wits, with his hair ſtanding on end.

When my father aſked the meaning of his exclamations, he told him with all the ſymptoms of diſmay, that I had lock'd him in, and he did not underſtand ſuch uſage: but I explained the whole myſtery, by ſaying, I had bolted the door, becauſe I did not like the company of his ſervants, and could not imagine the cauſe of his panic, unleſs he thought I deſigned to raviſh him; an inſult, than which nothing was farther from my intention. My father himſelf could ſcarce refrain from laughing at his ridiculous fear; but ſeeing him in great confuſion, took pity on his condition, and carried him off to his own lodgings, after I had given my word, that I would not attempt to eſcape, but give him audience next morning. I accordingly kept my promiſe, and found means to perſuade them to leave me at my own diſcretion. Next day, I was rallied upon the ſtratagem I had contrived to frighten lord ——; and a thouſand idle ſtories were told about this adventure, which happened literally as I have related it.

From Bath I betook myſelf to a ſmall houſe near Lincoln, which I hired of the d— of A——, becauſe a country life ſuited beſt with my income, which was no more than four hundred pounds a year, and that not well paid. I continued ſome months in this retirement, and ſaw no company, except lord R—— M——, who lived in the neighbourhood, and viſited me twice; till finding myſelf indiſpoſed, I was obliged to remove to London, and took lodgings

in Maddox-ſtreet, where my gariſon was taken by ſtorm, by my lord and his ſteward, reinforced by Mr. L—— V——, (who, as my lord told me, had a ſubſidy of five and twenty pounds, before he would take the field) and a couple of hardy footmen. This formidable band ruſhed into my apartment, laid violent hands upon me, dragged me down ſtairs, without gloves or a cloak, and thruſting me into a coach that ſtood at the door, conveyed me to my lord's lodgings in Glouceſter-ſtreet.

Upon this occaſion, his lordſhip courageouſly drew his ſword upon my woman, who attempted to defend me from his inſults, and, in all probability, would have intimidated him from proceeding; for he looked pale and aghaſt, his knees knocked together, and he breathed thick and hard, with his noſtrils dilated, as if he had ſeen a ghoſt. But he was encouraged by his mercenary aſſociate, who, for the five and twenty pounds, ſtood by him in the day of trouble, and ſpirited him on to this gallant enterprize.

In conſequence of this exploit, I was cooped up in a paultry apartment in Glouceſter-ſtreet, where I was cloſe beſet by his lordſhip, and his worthy ſteward Mr. H——, with a ſet of ſervants that were the creatures of this fellow, of whom lord —— himſelf ſtood in awe; ſo that I could not help thinking myſelf in Newgate, among thieves and ruffians: and to ſuch a degree did my terror prevail, that I actually believed I was in danger of being poiſoned, and would not receive any ſuſtenance, except from the hands of one harmleſs-looking fellow, a foreigner, who was my lord's valet de chambre. I will not pretend to ſay my fears were juſt; but ſuch was my opinion

opinion of H—n, that I never doubted he would put me out of the way, if he thought my life interfered with his intereſt.

On the ſecond day of my impriſonment, I was viſited by the duke of L——, a friend of my lord, who found me ſitting upon a trunk, in a poor little dining-room filled with lumber, and lighted with two bits of tallow-candle, which had been left over night. He perceived in my countenance a mixture of rage, indignation, terror and deſpair: he compaſſionated my ſufferings, though he could not alleviate my diſtreſs, any other way than by interceding with my tyrant to mitigate my oppreſſion. Nevertheleſs, I remained eleven days in this comfortable ſituation: I was watched like a criminal all day, and one of the ſervants walked from one room to another all night, in the nature of a patrole; while my lord, who lay in the chamber above me, got out of bed, and tripp'd to the window, at the ſound of every coach that chanced to paſs through the ſtreet. H——n, who was conſummate in the arts of a ſycophant, began to court my favour, by condoling my affliction, and aſſuring me, that the only method by which I could regain my liberty, was a chearful compliance with the humour of my lord. I was fully convinced of the truth of this obſervation; and though my temper is altogether averſe to diſſimulation, attempted to affect an air of ſerenity and reſignation. But this diſguiſe, I found, would not anſwer my purpoſe; and therefore I had recourſe to the aſſiſtance of my maid, who was permitted to attend me in my confinement. With her I frequently conſulted about the means of accompliſhing my eſcape; and, in conſequence of our deliberations, ſhe directed

rected a coach and ſix to be ready at a certain part of the town, and to wait for me three days in the ſame place, in caſe I could not come before the expiration of that term.

This previous meaſure being taken according to my inſtructions, the next neceſſary ſtep was to elude the vigilance of my guard: and in this manner did I effectuate my purpoſe. Being, by this time, indulged in the liberty of going out in the coach, for the benefit of the air, attended by two footmen, who had orders to watch all my motions, I made uſe of this privilege one forenoon, when lord —— expected ſome company to dinner, and bad the coachman drive to the lodgings of a man who wrote with his mouth, intending to give my ſpies the ſlip, on pretence of ſeeing this curioſity: but they were too alert in their duty to be thus outwitted, and followed me up ſtairs into the very apartment.

Diſappointed in this hope, I revolved another ſcheme, which was attended with ſucceſs: I bought ſome olives at an oil-ſhop; and telling the ſervants I would proceed to St. James's gate, and take a turn in the park, broke one of the bottles by the way, complained of the misfortune when I was ſet down, and deſired that my coach might be cleaned before my return. While my attendants were employed in this office, I tripp'd acroſs the parade to the horſe-guards, and chanced to meet with an acquaintance in the park, who ſaid, he ſaw by my countenance, that I was upon ſome expedition. I owned his ſuppoſition was juſt; but, as I had not time to relate particulars, I quickened my pace, and took poſſeſſion of a hackney-coach, in which I proceeded to the vehicle which I had appointed to be in waiting.

While

While I thus compaſſed my eſcape, there was nothing but perplexity and confuſion at home; dinner was delayed till ſix o'clock; my lord ran half over the town in queſt of his equipage, which at laſt returned, with an account of my elopement. My maid was brought to the queſtion, and grievouſly threatened; but (like all the women I ever had) remained unſhaken in her fidelity. In the mean time, I travelled night and day towards my retreat in Lincolnſhire, of which his lordſhip had not, as yet, got the leaſt intelligence; and as my coachman was but an unexperienced driver, I was obliged to make uſe of my own ſkill in that exerciſe, and direct his endeavours the whole way, without venturing to go to bed, or take the leaſt repoſe, until I reached my own habitation, where I lived in peace and tranquillity for the ſpace of ſix weeks, when I was alarmed by one of my lord's myrmidons, who came into the neighbourhood, bluſtering and ſwearing, that he would carry me off, either dead or alive.

It is not to be ſuppoſed that I was perfectly eaſy, when I was made acquainted with his purpoſe and declaration, as my whole family conſiſted of no more than a couple of women and one footman. However, I ſummoned up my courage, which had been often tried, and never forſook me in the day of danger; and ſent him word, that if ever he ſhould preſume to approach my houſe, I would order him to be ſhot, without ceremony. The fellow did not chooſe to put me to the trial, and returned to town without his errand. But as the place of my abode was now diſcovered, I laid my account with having a viſit from his employer: I therefore planted ſpies upon the

the road, with a promiſe of reward to him who ſhould bring me the firſt intelligence of his lordſhip's approach.

Accordingly, I was one morning apprized of his coming; and mounting horſe immediately, with my woman and valet, away we rode, in defiance of winter, and in two days got through the wilds of Lincolnſhire and hundreds of Eſſex, croſſed the river at Tilbury, breakfaſted at Chatham, by the help of a guide and moon-light, arrived at Dover the ſame evening, and embarked for Calais, in which place I found myſelf next day at two o'clock in the afternoon; and being heartily tired with my journey, betook myſelf to reſt. My maid, who was not able to travel with ſuch expedition, followed me at an eaſier pace; and the footman was ſo aſtoniſhed at my perſeverance, that he could not help aſking upon the road, if ever I was weary in my life. Certain it is, my ſpirits and reſolution have enabled me to undergo fatigues that are almoſt incredible. From Calais I went to Bruſſels, where I again ſet up my reſt in private lodgings; was again perfectly well received by the faſhionable people of that place; and, by the intereſt of my friends, obtained the queen of Hungary's protection againſt the perſecution of my huſband, while I ſhould reſide in the Auſtrian Netherlands.

Thus ſecured, I lived uncenſured, converſing with the Engliſh company, with which this city was crouded, but ſpent the moſt agreeable part of my time with the counteſs of Calemberg, in whoſe houſe I generally dined and ſupped; and I alſo contracted an intimacy with the princeſs of Chemay, who was a great favourite with Madam D'Harrach, the governor's lady.

I had not been long in this happy ſituation, when I was diſturbed by the arrival of lord ——, who demanded me of the governor; but finding me ſheltered from his power, he ſet out for Vienna; and, in conſequence of his repreſentations, ſtrengthened with the duke of N—'s name, my protection was withdrawn. But, before this application, he had gone to the camp, and addreſſed himſelf to my lord Stair, who was my particular friend, and ally by my firſt marriage, deſiring he would compel me to return to his houſe. His lordſhip told him, that I was in no ſhape ſubject to his command; but invited him to dinner, with a view of diverting himſelf and company, at the expence of his gueſt. In the evening, he was plied with ſo many bumpers to my health, that he became intoxicated, and extremely obſtreperous, inſiſted upon ſeeing lord Stair, after he was retired to reſt, and quarrelled with lord D——, who being a tall, large, raw-boned Scotchman, could have ſwallowed him at one mouthful; but he thought he might venture to challenge him, in hopes of being put under arreſt by the general: though he reckoned without his hoſt; lord Stair knew his diſpoſition, and, in order to puniſh his preſumption, winked at the affair. The challenger, finding himſelf miſtaken in his conjecture, got up early in the morning, and went off poſt for Vienna: and lord Stair deſired a certain man of quality to make me a viſit, and give me an account of his behaviour.

Being now deprived of my protection and pin-money, which my generous huſband would no longer pay, I was reduced to great difficulty and diſtreſs. The ducheſs D'Aremberg, lord G——, and many other perſons of diſtinction, interceded in my behalf

half with his majeſty, who was then abroad; but he refuſed to interpoſe between man and wife. The counteſs of Calemberg wrote a letter to my father, in which ſhe repreſented my uncomfortable ſituation, and undertook to anſwer for my conduct, in caſe he would allow me a ſmall annuity, on which I could live independant of lord ——, who, by all accounts, was a wretch with whom I could never enjoy the leaſt happineſs or quiet; otherwiſe, ſhe would be the firſt to adviſe me to an accommodation. She gave him to underſtand, that her character was neither doubtful nor obſcure; and that if my conduct there had not been irreproachable, ſhe ſhould not have taken me under her protection: that as I propoſed to board in a convent, a ſmall ſum would anſwer my occaſions; but, if that ſhould be denied, I would actually go to ſervice, or take ſome other deſperate ſtep, to avoid the man who was my bane and averſion.

To this kind remonſtrance my father anſwered, that his fortune would not allow him to aſſiſt me; he had now a young family; and that I ought, at all events, to return to my huſband. By this time, ſuch was the extremity of my circumſtances, that I was forced to pawn my cloaths, and every trifling trinket in my poſſeſſion, and even to deſcend ſo far as to ſollicit Mr. S— for a loan of fifty pounds, which he refuſed.

Thus was I deſerted, in my diſtreſs, by two perſons, to whom, in the ſeaſon of my affluence, my purſe had been always open. Nothing ſo effectually ſubdues a ſpirit unuſed to ſupplicate, as want: repulſed in this manner, I had recourſe to lord B—, who was alſo (it ſeems) unable to relieve

my

my neceſſities. This mortification I deſerved at his hands, tho' he had once put it in my power to be above all ſuch paultry demands; and I ſhould not have been compelled to the diſagreeable taſk of troubling my friends, had not I voluntarily reſigned what he formerly gave me. As to the other gentleman to whom I addreſſed myſelf, on this occaſion, I think he might have ſhewn more regard to my application, not only for the reaſons already mentioned, but becauſe he knew me too well to be ignorant of what I muſt have ſuffered, in condeſcending to make ſuch a requeſt.

Several officers, who gueſs'd my adverſity, generouſly offered to ſupply me with money; but I could not bring myſelf to make uſe of their friendſhip, or even to own my diſtreſs, except to one perſon, of whom I borrowed a ſmall ſum. To crown my misfortunes, I was taken very ill, at a time when there was no other way of avoiding the clutches of my perſecutor, but by a precipitate flight. In this emergency, I applied to a worthy gentleman of Bruſſels, a very good friend of mine, but no lover. I ſay no lover, becauſe every man is ſuppoſed to act in that capacity who befriends a young woman in diſtreſs. This generous Fleming ſet out with me, in the night, from Bruſſels, and conducted me to the frontiers of France. Being very much indiſpoſed both in mind and body when I was obliged to undertake this expedition, I ſhould, in all probability, have ſunk under the fatigue of travelling, had not my ſpirits been kept up by the converſation of my companion, who was a man of buſineſs and conſequence, and undertook to manage

my

my affairs in ſuch a manner as would enable me to re-eſtabliſh my reſidence in the place I had left. He was young and active, attended me with the utmoſt care and aſſiduity, and left nothing undone which he thought would contribute to my eaſe and ſatisfaction. I believe his friendſhip for me was a little tinctured with another paſſion; but he was married, and lived very well with his wife, who was alſo my friend; ſo that he knew I would never think of him in the light of a lover.

Upon our arrival at Valenciennes, he accommodated me with a little money (for a little was all I would take) and returned to his own city, after we had ſettled a correſpondence by letters. I was detained a day or two in this place by my indiſpoſition, which increaſed; but nevertheleſs proceeded to Paris, to make intereſt for a protection from the king of France, which that monarch graciouſly accorded me, in three days after my firſt application; and his miniſter ſent orders to all the governors and intendants of the province towns, to protect me againſt the efforts of lord ———, in whatever place I ſhould chooſe to reſide.

Having returned my thanks at Verſailles for this favour, and tarried a few days at Paris, which was a place altogether unſuitable to the low ebb of my fortune, I repaired to Liſle, where I intended to fix my habitation; and there my diſorder recurred with ſuch violence, that I was obliged to ſend for a phyſician, who ſeemed to have been a diſciple of Sangrado; for he ſcarce left a drop of blood in my body, and yet I found myſelf never a whit the better. Indeed I was ſo much exhauſted by theſe evacuations, and my con-

conſtitution ſo much impaired by fatigue and perturbation of mind, that I had no other hope of recovering but that of reaching England, and putting myſelf under the direction of a phyſician on whoſe ability I could depend.

With this doubtful proſpect, therefore, I determined to attempt a return to my native air, and actually departed from Liſle, in ſuch a melancholy enfeebled condition, that I had almoſt fainted when I was put into the coach. But before I reſolved upon this journey I was reduced to the utmoſt exigence of fortune; ſo that I could ſcarce afford to buy proviſions, had it been in my power to eat, and ſhould not have been able to defray my travelling expences, had I not been generouſly befriended by lord R— M— who (I am ſure) would have done any thing for my eaſe and accommodation, tho' he has unjuſtly incurred the imputation of being parſimonious, and I had no reaſon to expect any ſuch favour at his hands.

In this deplorable ſtate of health I was conveyed to Calais, being all the way (as it were) in the arms of death, without having ſwallowed the leaſt ſuſtenance on the road; and ſo much was my indiſpoſition augmented by the fatigue of the journey, that I ſwooned when I was brought into the inn, and had almoſt expired before I could receive the leaſt aſſiſtance or advice: however, my ſpirits were a little revived by ſome bread and wine, which I took at the perſuaſion of a French ſurgeon, who chancing to paſs by the door, was called up to my relief; and having ſent my ſervant to Bruſſels to take care of my cloaths, embarked in the packet-boat, and by that time we arrived at Dover, was almoſt in extremity.

Here

Here I found a return coach, in which I was carried to London, and was put to bed in the houſe at which we put up, more dead than alive. The people of the inn ſent for an apothecary, who adminiſtred ſome cordial that recalled me to life; and when I recovered the uſe of ſpeech, I told him who I was, and deſired him to wait upon Dr. S— and inform him of my ſituation. A young girl who was niece to the landlord's wife, ſeeing me unattended, made a tender of her ſervice to me, and I accepted the offer, as well as of a lodging in the apothecary's houſe, to which I was conveyed as ſoon as my ſtrength would admit of my removal; and there was viſited by my phyſician, who was ſhocked to find me in ſuch a dangerous condition: however, having conſidered my caſe, he perceived that my indiſpoſition proceeded from the calamities I had undergone, and encouraged me with the hope of a ſpeedy cure, provided I could be kept eaſy and undiſturbed.

I was accordingly tended with all imaginable care; my lord's name being never mentioned in my hearing, becauſe I conſidered him as the fatal ſource of all my misfortunes; and in a month I recovered my health, by the great ſkill and tenderneſs of my doctor, who now finding me ſtrong enough to encounter freſh troubles, endeavoured to perſuade me, that it would be my wiſeſt ſtep to return to my husband, whom, at that time, he had often occaſion to ſee. But I rejected his propoſal, commenced a new lawſuit for ſeparation, and took a ſmall houſe in St. James's Square.

About this time, my woman returned from Bruſſels, but without my cloaths, which were de-

detained on account of the money I owed in that place; and aſking her diſmiſſion from my ſervice, ſet up ſhop for herſelf. I had not lived many weeks in my new habitation, when my perſecutor renewed his attempts to make himſelf maſter of my perſon; but I had learn'd from experience, to redouble my vigilance, and he was fruſtrated in all his endeavours. I was again happy in the converſation of my former acquaintance, and viſited by a great number of gentlemen, moſtly perſons of probity and ſenſe, who cultivated my friendſhip, without any other motive of attachment. Not that I was unſolicited on the article of love; that was a theme on which I never wanted orators; and could I have prevailed upon myſelf to profit by the advances that were made, I might have managed my opportunities, ſo as to have ſet fortune at defiance for the future. But I was none of thoſe œconomiſts, who can ſacrifice their hearts to intereſted conſiderations.

One evening, while I was converſing with three or four of my friends, my lawyer came in, and told me he had ſomething of conſequence to impart: upon which, all the gentlemen but one went away; and he gave me to underſtand, that my ſuit would immediately come to trial; and though he hoped the beſt, the iſſue was uncertain: that if it ſhould be given againſt me, the deciſion would inſpire my lord with freſh ſpirits to diſturb my peace; and therefore it would be convenient for me to retire, until the affair ſhould be brought to a determination.

I was very much diſconcerted at this intelligence; and the gentleman who ſtayed perceiving my concern, aſked what I intended to do, or if he

he could ſerve me in any ſhape, and deſired to know whither I propoſed to retreat. I affected to laugh, and anſwered, "To a garret I believe." To this over-ſtrained raillery he replied, that if I ſhould, his friendſhip and regard would find the way to my apartment; and I had no reaſon to doubt the ſincerity of his declaration. We conſulted about the meaſures I ſhould take, and I determined to remove into the country, where I was ſoon favoured with a letter from him, wherein he expreſſed the infinite pleaſure he had, in being able to aſſure me, that my ſuit had been ſucceſsful, and that I might appear again with great ſafety.

Accordingly, I returned to town in his coach and ſix, which he had ſent for my convenience, and the ſame evening went with him to the maſquerade, where we paſſed the night very agreeably, his ſpirits, as well as mine, being elevated to a joyous pitch, by the happy event of my proceſs. This gentleman was a perſon of great honour, worth and good nature; he loved me extremely, but did not care that I ſhould know the extent of his paſſion: on the contrary, he endeavoured to perſuade me, he had laid it down as a maxim, that no woman ſhould ever have power enough over his heart, to give him the leaſt pain or diſquiet. In ſhort, he had made a progreſs in my affection, and to his generoſity was I indebted for my ſubſiſtence two whole years; during which, he was continually profeſſing this philoſophic indifference, while, at the ſame time, he was giving me daily aſſurances of his friendſhip and eſteem, and treating me with inceſſant marks of the moſt paſſionate love: ſo that I concluded

his intention was cold, though his temper was warm; and conſidering myſelf as an incumbrance upon his fortune, I redoubled my endeavours to obtain a ſeparate maintenance from my lord, and removed from St. James's Square to lodgings at Kenſington, where I had not long enjoyed myſelf in tranquillity, before it was interrupted by a very unexpected viſit.

While I was buſy one day dreſſing in my dining-room, I found his lordſhip at my elbow, before I was aware of his approach, although his coach was at the door, and the houſe already in the poſſeſſion of his ſervants. He accoſted me in the uſual ſtile, as if we had parted the night before; and I anſwered him with an appearance of the ſame careleſs familiarity, deſiring him to ſit down, while I retreated to my chamber, lock'd the door, and fairly went to bed; being, perhaps, the firſt woman who went thither for protection from the inſults of a man. Here then I immured myſelf with my faithful Abigail; and my lord finding me ſecured, knocked at the door, and through the key-hole begg'd to be admitted; aſſuring me, that all he wanted was a conference. I deſired to be excuſed, though I believed his aſſurance; but I had no inclination to converſe with him, becauſe I knew from experience the nature of his converſation, which was ſo diſagreeable and tormenting, that I would have exchanged it at any time for a good beating, and thought myſelf a gainer by the bargain. However, he perſiſted in his importunities to ſuch a degree, that I aſſented to his propoſal, on condition that the duke of L—— ſhould be preſent at the interview; and he immediately ſent a meſſage to his grace, while I in peace ate my breakfaſt,

con-

conveyed in a baſket, which was hoiſted up to the window of my bed-chamber.

The duke was ſo kind as to come at my lord's requeſt, and before I would open the door, gave me his word, that I ſhould be protected from all violence and compulſion. Thus aſſured, they were permitted to enter; and my little gentleman ſitting down by the bed-ſide, began to repeat the old hackneyed arguments he had formerly uſed, with the view of inducing me to live with him; and I, on my ſide, repeated my former objections, or pretended to liſten to his repreſentations, while my imagination was employed in contriving the means of effecting an eſcape, as the duke eaſily perceived by my countenance.

Finding all his remonſtrances ineffectual, he quitted the chamber, and left his cauſe to the eloquence of his grace, who ſat with me a whole half hour, without exerting himſelf much in behalf of his client, becauſe he knew I was altogether obſtinate, and determined on that ſcore; but joked upon the behaviour of his lordſhip, who (though jealous of moſt people) had left him alone with me in my bed-chamber, obſerving, that he muſt either have great confidence in his virtue, or a very bad opinion of him otherwiſe. In ſhort, I found means to defer the categorical anſwer till next day, and invited the duke and his lordſhip to dine with me to-morrow. My wiſe yoke-fellow ſeemed to doubt the ſincerity of this invitation, and was very much diſpoſed to keep poſſeſſion of my fort: but, by the perſuaſions of his grace, and the advice of H—n, who was his chief counſellor and back, he was

prevailed upon to take my word, and for the preſent left me.

They were no ſooner retired, than I roſe with great expedition, pack'd up my cloaths, and took ſhelter in Eſſex for the firſt time. Next day, my lord and his noble friend came to dinner, according to appointment; and being informed of my eſcape by my woman, whom I had left in the houſe, his lordſhip diſcovered ſome ſigns of diſcontent, and inſiſted upon ſeeing my papers; upon which, my maid produced a parcel of bills which I owed to different people. Notwithſtanding this diſappointment, he ſat down to what was provided for dinner, and with great deliberation ate up a leg of lamb, the beſt part of a fowl, and ſomething elſe, which I do not now remember; and then very peaceably went away, giving my maid an opportunity of following me to the place of my retreat.

My intention was to have ſought refuge, as formerly, in another country; but I was prevented from putting my deſign in execution by a fit of illneſs, during which I was viſited by my phyſician and ſome of my own relations, particularly a diſtant couſin of mine, whom my lord had engaged in his intereſts, by promiſing to recompence her amply, if ſhe could perſuade me to comply with his deſire. In this office ſhe was aſſiſted by the doctor, who was my friend, and a man of ſenſe, for whom I have the moſt perfect eſteem, though he and I have often differed in point of opinion. In a word, I was expoſed to the inceſſant importunities of all my acquaintance, which, added to the deſperate circumſtances of my fortune, compelled me to embrace the terms

that

that were offered, and I again returned to the domeſtic duties of a wife.

I was conducted to my lord's houſe by an old friend of mine, a gentleman turned of fifty, of admirable parts and underſtanding; he was a pleaſing companion, chearful and humane, and had acquired a great ſhare of my eſteem and reſpect. In a word, his advice had great weight in my deliberations, becauſe it ſeemed to be the reſult of experience and diſintereſted friendſhip. Without all doubt, he had an unfeigned concern for my welfare; but, being an admirable politician, his ſcheme was to make my intereſt coincide with his own inclinations; for I had unwittingly made an innovation upon his heart; and as he thought I ſhould hardly favour his paſſion, while I was at liberty to converſe with the reſt of my admirers, he counſelled me to ſurrender that freedom, well knowing that my lord would be eaſily perſuaded to baniſh all his rivals from the houſe; in which caſe, he did not doubt of his being able to inſinuate himſelf into my affections; becauſe he laid it down as an eternal truth, that if any two perſons of different ſexes were obliged to live together in a deſart, where they would be excluded from all other human intercourſe, they would naturally and inevitably contract an inclination for each other.

How juſt this hypotheſis may be, I leave to the determination of the curious; though, if I may be allowed to judge from my own diſpoſition, a couple ſo ſituated would be apt to imbibe mutual diſguſts, from the nature and neceſſity of their union; unleſs their aſſociation was at firſt the effect of reciprocal affection and eſteem. Be this as it will, I honour the gentle-

man for his plan, which was ingeniouſly contrived, and artfully conducted: but I happened to have too much addreſs for him in the ſequel, cunning as he was, though at firſt I did not perceive his drift; and his lordſhip was much leſs likely to comprehend his meaning.

Immediately after this new accommodation, I was carried to a country-houſe belonging to my lord, and was ſimple enough to venture myſelf (unattended by any ſervant on whoſe integrity I could depend) in the hands of his lordſhip and H——n, whoſe villainy I always dreaded; tho' at this time my apprehenſions were conſiderably increaſed, by recollecting, that it was not his intereſt to let me live in the houſe, leſt his conduct ſhould be inquired into; and by remembering, that the very houſe to which we were going, had been twice burnt down in a very ſhort ſpace of time, not without ſuſpicion of his having been the incendiary, on account of ſome box of writings, which was loſt in the conflagration. True it is, this imputation was never made good; and perhaps he was altogether innocent of the charge, which nevertheleſs affected my ſpirits in ſuch a manner, as rendered me the moſt miſerable of all mortals; and in this terror did I remain, till my conſternation was weakened by the arrival of Mr. Bal—, a good natured worthy man, whom my lord had invited to his houſe, and I thought would not ſee me ill uſed; and in a few weeks, we were joined by Dr. S— and his lady, who viſited us according to their promiſe; and it was reſolved that we ſhould ſet out for Tunbridge, on a partie of pleaſure, and at our return examine H——n's accounts.

This

This laſt part of our ſcheme was not all reliſhed by our worthy ſteward, who, therefore, determined to overturn our whole plan, and ſucceeded accordingly. My lord, all of a ſudden, declared himſelf againſt the jaunt we had projected, and inſiſted upon my ſtaying at home, without aſſigning any reaſon for this peremptory behaviour; his countenance became cloudy, and for the ſpace of three days he did not open his mouth.

At laſt, he one night entered my bed-chamber, to which he now had free acceſs, with his ſword under his arm, and, if I remember aright, it was ready drawn. I could not help taking notice of this alarming circumſtance, which ſhocked me the more, as it happened immediately after a gloomy fit of diſcontent. However, I ſeemed to overlook the incident, and diſmiſſing my maid, went to bed; becauſe I was aſhamed to acknowledge, even to my own heart, any dread of a perſon whom I deſpiſed ſo much. However, the ſtrength of my conſtitution was not equal to the fortitude of my mind: I was taken ill, and the ſervants were obliged to be called up; while my lord himſelf, terrified at my ſituation, ran up ſtairs to Mrs. S——, who was in bed, told her, with evident perturbation of ſpirits, that I was very much indiſpoſed, and ſaid, he believed I was frightened by his entering my chamber with his ſword in hand.

This lady was ſo ſtartled at his information, that ſhe ran into my apartment half-naked, and as ſhe went down ſtairs, aſked what reaſon could induce him to have carried his ſword with him? Upon which he gave her to underſtand, that his intention was to kill the bats. I believe and

hope he had no other deſign than that of intimidating me, but when the affair happened, I was of a different opinion. Mrs. S— having put on her cloaths, ſat up all night by my bed-ſide, and was ſo good as to aſſure me, that ſhe would not leave me, until I ſhould be ſafely delivered from the apprehenſions that ſurrounded me in this houſe, to which ſhe and the doctor had been the principal cauſe of my coming; for my lord had haunted and importuned them inceſſantly on this ſubject, proteſting that he loved me with the moſt inviolable affection; and all he deſired was, that I would ſit at his table, manage his family, and ſhare his fortune. By theſe profeſſions, uttered with an air of honeſty and good-nature, he had impoſed himſelf upon them, for the beſt tempered creature upon earth; and they uſed all their influence with me to take him into favour. This hath been the caſe with a great many people, who had but a ſuperficial knowledge of his diſpoſition; but, in the courſe of their acquaintance, they have never failed to diſcern and acknowledge their miſtake.

The doctor, on his return from Tunbridge, to which place he had made a trip by himſelf, found me ill a-bed, and the whole family in confuſion: ſurprized and concerned at this diſorder, he entered into expoſtulation with my lord, who owned, that the cauſe of his diſpleaſure and diſquiet was no other than jealouſy: H— had informed him, that I had been ſeen to walk out with Mr. Bal— in a morning; and that our correſpondence had been obſerved with many additional circumſtances, which were abſolutely falſe and groundleſs. This imputation was no ſooner underſtood, than it was reſolved that the accuſer

ſhould

ſhould be examined, in preſence of us all. He accordingly appeared, exceedingly drunk, tho' it was morning, and repeated the articles of the charge, as an information he had received from a man who came from town to hang the bells, and was long ago returned to London.

This was an inſtance of his cunning and addreſs, which did not forſake him even in his hours of intoxication. Had he fixed the calumny on any one of the ſervants, he would have been confronted and detected in his falſhood. Nevertheleſs, tho' he could not be legally convicted, it plainly appeared that he was the author of this defamation, which incenſed Mr. Bal— to ſuch a degree, that he could ſcarce be with-held from puniſhing him on the ſpot, by manual chaſtiſement. However, he was prevailed upon to abſtain from ſuch immediate vengeance, as a ſtep unworthy of his character; and the affair was brought to this iſſue, that his lordſhip ſhould either part with me or Mr. H—; for I was fully determined againſt living under the ſame roof with ſuch an incendiary.

This alternative being propoſed, my lord diſmiſs'd his ſteward, and we returned to town with the doctor and Mrs. S—; for I had imbibed ſuch horror and averſion for this country ſeat (tho' one of the pleaſanteſt in England) that I could not bear to live in it. We therefore removed to an houſe in Bond-ſtreet, where, according to the advice of my friends, I exerted my whole power and complaiſance, in endeavours to keep my huſband in good humour; but was ſo unſucceſsful in my attempts, that if ever he was worſe tempered, more capricious, or intolerable, at one time than at another, this was the ſeaſon in

which his ill-humour predominated to the moſt rancorous degree. I was ſcarce ever permitted to ſtir abroad, ſaw no-body at home but my old male-friend whom I have mentioned above, and the doctor with his lady, from whoſe converſation alſo I was at laſt excluded.

Nevertheleſs, I contrived to ſteal a meeting, now and then, with my late benefactor, for whom I entertained a great ſhare of affection, excluſive of that gratitude which was due to his generoſity. It was not his fault that I compromiſed matters with my lord; for he was as free of his purſe as I was unwilling to uſe it. It would, therefore, have been unfriendly, unkind, and ungrateful in me (now that I was in affluence) to avoid all intercourſe with a man who had ſupported me in adverſity.—I think people cannot be too ſhy and ſcrupulous in receiving favours; but once they are conferred, they ought never to forget the obligation: and I was never more concerned at any incident of my life, than at hearing that this gentleman did not receive a letter, in which I acknowledged the laſt proof of his friendſhip and liberality which I had occaſion to uſe, becauſe I have ſince learned, that he ſuſpected me of neglect.

But, to return to my ſituation in Bond-ſtreet, I bore it as well as I could for the ſpace of three months, during which I lived in the midſt of ſpies who were employed to watch my conduct; and underwent every mortification that malice, power, and folly could inflict. Nay, ſo ridiculous, ſo unreaſonable was my tyrant in his ſpleen, that he declared he would even be jealous of Heydigger, if there was no other man to incur his ſuſpicion: he expected that I ſhould ſpend my whole time with him, *tête a tête*; and when I

ſacrificed my enjoyment to theſe comfortable parties, he never failed to lay hold on ſome innocent expreſſion of mine, which he made the foundation of a quarrel; and when I ſtrove to avoid theſe diſagreeable miſinterpretations, by reading or writing, he inceſſantly teized and tormented me with the imputation of being peeviſh, ſullen and reſerved.

Harraſſed by this inſufferable behaviour, I communicated my caſe to Dr. S— and his lady, intimating that I neither could nor would expoſe myſelf any longer to ſuch uſage. The doctor exhorted me to bear my fate with patience, and Mrs. S— was ſilent on the ſubject; ſo that I ſtill heſitated between ſtaying and going, when the doctor being one night at ſupper, happened to have ſome words with my lord, who was ſo violently tranſported with paſſion, that I was actually afraid of going to bed with him; and next morning when he waked, there was ſuch an expreſſion of frantic wildneſs in his countenance, that I imagined he was actually diſtracted.

This alarming circumſtance confirmed me in my reſolution of decamping; and I accordingly moved my quarters to an houſe in Sackville-ſtreet, where I had lodged when I was a widow; and when I was ſettled, ſent a meſſage to the duke of L—, deſiring he would make my lord acquainted with the place of my abode, my reaſons for removing, and my intention to defend myſelf againſt all his attempts. The firſt night of this ſeparation I went to bed by myſelf, with as much pleaſure as a man could do in going to bed to his miſtreſs, whom he had long ſolicited in vain. So rejoiced was I to be delivered from my obnoxious bedfellow!

I had not long changed my lodgings, which I did to Brook-ſtreet, and enjoyed the ſweets of my eſcape, when I was importuned to return, by a new ſteward whom my lord had engaged in the room of H—n. This gentleman, who bore a very fair character, made ſuch judicious repreſentations, and behaved ſo candidly in the diſcharge of his function, that I agreed he ſhould act as umpire in the difference between us; and once more a reconciliation was effected, tho' his lordſhip began to be diſſatisfied even before the execution of our agreement, in conſequence of which he attended me to Bath, whither I went for the benefit of my health, which was not a little impaired.

This accommodation had a ſurpriſing effect upon my lover, who, notwithſtanding his repeated declarations, that no woman ſhould ever gain ſuch an aſcendency over his heart, as to be able to give him pain, ſuffered all the agonies of diſappointed love, when he now found himſelf deprived of the opportunities of ſeeing me, and behaved very differently from what he had imagined he ſhould: his words and actions were deſperate; one of his expreſſions to me was, "It "is like twiſting my heart-ſtrings, and tearing "it out of my body." And I ſhould never have done it, had I thought he would have ſuffered; but I proteſt I believed him when he ſaid otherwiſe ſo much, that it was the occaſion of my giving him up; and it was now too late to retract.

In our expedition to the Bath I was accompanied by a very agreeable young lady, with whom I paſs'd my time very happily, amid the diverſions of the place, which ſcreened me,

me, in a good meaſure, from the vexatious ſociety of my hopeful partner. From this place we repaired to his ſeat in the country, where we ſpent a few months, and thence returned again to our houſe in Bond-ſtreet. Here, while I was confined to my bed by illneſs, it was ſuppoſed my indiſpoſition was no other than a private lying in, tho' I was under the roof with my lord, and attended by his ſervants.

While my diſtemper continued, my lord (to do him juſtice) behaved with all imaginable tenderneſs and care; and his concern on theſe occaſions I have already mentioned, as a ſtrange inconſiſtency in his diſpoſition. If his actions were at all accountable, I ſhould think he took pains to fret me into a fever firſt, in order to manifeſt his love and humanity afterwards. When I recovered my ſtrength and ſpirits, I went abroad, ſaw company, and ſhould have been eaſy, had he been contented; but as my ſatisfaction increaſed, his good humour decayed, and he baniſhed, from his houſe, one by one, all the people whoſe converſation could have made my life agreeable.

I often expoſtulated with him upon this malignant behaviour, proteſting my deſire of living peaceably with him; and begging he would not lay me under the neceſſity of changing my meaſures. He was deaf to all my remonſtrances, (tho' I warned him more than once of the event) perſiſted in his maxims of perſecution; and, after repeated quarrels, I again left his houſe, fully determined to ſuffer all ſorts of extremity, rather than ſubject myſelf to the tyranny of his diſpoſition.

This year was productive of one fatal event, which I felt with the utmoſt ſenſibility of ſorrow,

and ſhall always remember with regret: I mean the death of Mr. B—, with whom I had conſtantly maintained an intimate correſpondence ſince the firſt commencement of our acquaintance. He was one of the moſt valuable men, and promiſed to be one of the brighteſt ornaments that this or any other age had produced. I enjoyed his friendſhip, without reſerve; and ſuch was the confidence he repoſed in my integrity, from long experience of my truth, that he often ſaid he would believe my bare aſſertion, even tho' it ſhould contradict the evidence of his own ſenſes. Theſe being the terms upon which we lived, it is not to be ſuppoſed that I bore the loſs of him without repining: indeed my grief was unſpeakable; and tho' the edge of it be now ſmoothed by the lenient hand of time, I ſhall never ceaſe to cheriſh his memory with the moſt tender remembrance.

During the laſt period of my living with my lord, I had agreed to the expediency of obtaining an act of parliament, which would enable him to pay his debts; on which occaſion there was a neceſſity for cancelling a deed that ſubſiſted between us, relating to a ſeparate maintenance; to which, on certain proviſos, I was intitled: and this was to be ſet aſide, ſo far as it interfered with the above mentioned ſcheme, while the reſt of it ſhould remain in force. When this affair was about to be tranſacted, my lord very generouſly inſiſted upon my concurrence, in annulling the whole ſettlement; and when I refuſed to comply with this demand, becauſe this was the ſole reſource I had againſt his ill uſage, he would not proceed in the execution of his plan, tho' by dropping it he hurt no-body but himſelf; and

and accuſed me of having receded from my word, after I had drawn him into a conſiderable expence.

This imputation of breaking my word, which I defy the whole world to prove I ever did, incenſed me the more, as I myſelf had propoſed the ſcheme for his ſervice, altho' I knew the accompliſhment of it would endanger the validity of my own ſettlement; and my indignation was ſtill more augmented by the behaviour of Mr. G—, who had always profeſſed a regard for my intereſt, and upon my laſt accommodation with my lord, undertaken to effect a reconciliation between my father and me: but when he was queſtioned about the particulars of this difference, and deſired to declare whether his lordſhip or I was to blame, he declined the office of arbitrator, refuſed to be explicit on the ſubject, and by certain ſhrewd hums and ha's ſignified his diſapprobation of my conduct; and yet this very man, when I imparted to him, in confidence, my intention of making another retreat, and frankly aſked his opinion of my deſign, ſeemed to acquieſce in the juſtice of it, in theſe remarkable words: "Madam, if I thought, or had hopes "of my lord's growing better, I would down "on my knees, to deſire you to ſtay; but as I "have not, I ſay nothing."

If he connived at my conduct in this particular, why ſhould he diſapprove of it, when all I aſked was but common juſtice? But he was a dependent; and therefore I excuſe his phlegmatic (not to call it unfriendly) behaviour. Indeed he could not be too cautious of giving offence to his lordſhip, who ſometimes made him feel the effects of that wrath which other people had kindled;

kindled; particularly, in conſequence of a ſmall adventure which happened about this very period of time.

A very agreeable, ſprightly, good-natured young man, a near relation of my lord, happening to be at our houſe one evening, when there was a fire in the neighbourhood, we agreed to go and ſup at a tavern, *en famille*; and having ſpent the evening with great mirth and good humour, this young gentleman, who was naturally facetious, in taking his leave, ſaluted us all round. My lord, who had before entertained ſome jealouſy of his kinſman, was very much provoked by this trifling incident, but very prudently ſuppreſſed his diſpleaſure till he returned to his own houſe, where his rage co-operating with the Champagne he had drank, inflamed him to ſuch a degree of reſolution, that he ſprung upon the innocent G—n, and collared him with great fury, though he was altogether unconcerned in the cauſe of his indignation.

This extravagant and frantic behaviour, added to the other grievances under which I laboured, haſtened my reſolution of leaving him; and he to this day blames his relation, as the immediate cauſe of my eſcape, whereas he ought to place it to the account of his own madneſs and indiſcretion. When I retired to Park-ſtreet, he cautioned all my tradeſmen (not even excepting my baker) againſt giving me credit, aſſuring them that he would not pay any debts I ſhould contract; and the difficulties to which I was reduced, in conſequence of this charitable declaration, together with the reflection of what I had ſuffered, and might undergo, from the caprice and barbarity of his diſpoſition, affected my health

health ſo much, that I was taken again ill, and my life thought in danger.

My conſtitution, however, got the better of my diſtemper, and I was ordered into the country by my phyſicians, for the benefit of the air; ſo that I found myſelf under the neceſſity of keeping two houſes, when I was little able to ſupport one, and ſet up my chariot, becauſe I could not defray the expence of an hackney coach; for I had as much credit given me as I aſk'd for, notwithſtanding my lord's orders to the contrary.

Having recruited my ſpirits in the country, I returned to town, and was viſited by my friends, who never forſook me in adverſity, and in the ſummer removed to an houſe in Eſſex, where I lived a few months in great tranquillity, unmoleſted by my tyrant, who ſometimes gave me a whole year's reſpite. Here I uſed to ride and drive by turns (as my humour dictated) with horſes which were lent me; and I had the company of my lover, and another gentleman, who was a very agreeable companion, and of ſingular ſervice to me in the ſequel.

At laſt, my lord having received intelligence of the place of my abode, and his tormenting humour recurring, he ſet out for my habitation, and in the morning appeared in his coach and ſix, attended by Mr. G—n, and another perſon, whom he had engaged for the purpoſe, with ſeveral domeſticks armed. I immediately ſhut up my doors at his approach, and refuſed him admittance, which he endeavoured to obtain by a ſucceſſion of prayers and threats; but I was deaf to both, and reſolved to hold out to the laſt. Seeing me determined, he began his attack, and his ſervants actually forced their way into the houſe; upon

upon which I retreated up ſtairs, and fortified myſelf in an apartment, which the aſſailants ſtormed with ſuch fury, that the door began to give way, and I retired into another room.

Whilſt I remained in this poſt, Mr. G——n demanded a parley, in which he begg'd I would favour my lord with an interview, otherwiſe he knew not what would be the conſequence. To this remonſtrance I replied, that I was not diſpoſed to comply with his requeſt; and that though their deſign ſhould be murder, I was not at all afraid of death. Upon this declaration they renewed their attacks, which they carried on with indifferent ſucceſs till the afternoon, when my lord (as if he had been at play) ſent a formal meſſage to me, deſiring that all hoſtilities ſhould ceaſe, till after both parties ſhould have dined. At the ſame time, my own ſervants came for inſtructions; and I ordered them to let him have every thing which he ſhould call for, as far as the houſe would afford.

He did not fail to make uſe of this permiſſion; but, ſitting down with his companions, ate up my dinner without heſitation, after he had paid me the compliment, of deſiring to know what he ſhould ſend up to my apartment. Far from having any ſtomach to partake of his meal, I ſat ſolitary upon my bed, in a ſtate of melancholy expectation, having faſtened the door of the outward room for my ſecurity, while I kept my chamber open for the convenience of air, the weather being exceſſively hot.

His lordſhip having indulged his appetite, reſumed his attempt, and all of a ſudden I heard a noiſe in the next room; upon which I ſtarted up, and perceiving that he had got into my anti-

chamber,

chamber, by the help of a bench that ſtood under the window, I flung to the door of my room, which I locked with great expedition, and opening another that communicated with the ſtaircaſe, ran out of the houſe, through a croud of more than an hundred people, whom this fray had gathered together.

Being univerſally beloved in the neighbourhood, and reſpected by my lord's ſervants, I paſſed among them untouched, and took refuge in a neighbouring cottage; while his lordſhip bawled and roared for aſſiſtance, being afraid to come out as he had got in. Without waiting for his deliberations, I changed cloaths with the poor woman who had given me ſhelter, and in her blue apron and ſtraw-hat ſallied out into the fields, intending to ſeek protection at the houſe of a gentleman not far off, though I was utterly ignorant of the road that led to it. However, it was my good fortune to meet with a farmer, who undertook to conduct me to the place; otherwiſe I ſhould have miſſed my way, and, in all probability, lain in the fields; for, by this time, it was eight o'clock at night.

Under the direction of this guide, I traverſed hedges and ditches, (for I would not venture to travel in the highway, leſt I ſhould fall into the hands of my purſuer) and after I had actually tumbled in the mire, and walked ſix or ſeven long miles, by the help of a good ſpirit, which never failed me on ſuch occaſions, I arrived at the place, and rung the bell at the garden-gate for admittance. Seeing my figure, which was very uncouth, together with my draggled condition, they denied me entrance; but when they underſtood who I was, immediately opened the door, and

and I was hoſpitably entertained, after having been the ſubject of mirth, on account of my dreſs and adventure.

Next day I returned, and took poſſeſſion of my houſe again, where I reſumed my former amuſements, which I enjoyed in quiet, for the ſpace of a whole month, waiting with reſignation for the iſſue of my law-ſuit; when one afternoon, I was apprized of his lordſhip's approach, by one of my ſpies, whom I always employed to reconnoitre the road; and ſo fortunate was I in the choice of theſe ſcouts, that I never was betrayed by one of them, though they were often bribed for that purpoſe.

I no ſooner received this intelligence, than I ordered my horſe to be ſaddled, and mounting, rode out of ſight immediately, directing my courſe a different way from the London road. I had not long proceeded in this tract, when my career was all of a ſudden ſtopp'd by a five-bar gate, which, after ſome heſitation, I reſolved to leap (my horſe being an old hunter) if I ſhould find myſelf purſued. However, with much difficulty I made ſhift to open it, and arrived in ſafety at the houſe of my very good friend Mr. G——, who being a juſtice of the peace, had promiſed me his protection, if it ſhould be wanted.

Thus ſecured for the preſent, I ſent out ſpies to bring information of his lordſhip's proceedings, and underſtood that he had taken poſſeſſion of my houſe, turned my ſervants adrift, and made himſelf maſter of all my moveables, cloaths and papers. As for the papers, they were of no conſequence, but of cloaths I had a good ſtock; and when I had reaſon to believe that he did not intend to relinquiſh his conqueſt, I thought it was high

high time for me to remove to a greater diſtance from his quarters. Accordingly, two days after my eſcape, I ſet out at eleven o'clock at night, in a chariot and four, which I borrowed of my friend, attended by a footman, who was a ſtout fellow and well armed, I myſelf being provided with a brace of good piſtols, which I was fully determined to uſe, againſt any perſon who ſhould preſume to lay violent hands upon me, except my lord, for whom a leſs mortal weapon would have ſufficed, ſuch as a bodkin or a tinder-box. Nothing could be farther from my intention, than the deſire of hurting any living creature, much leſs my huſband; my deſign was only to defend myſelf from cruelty and oppreſſion, which I knew, by fatal experience, would infallibly be my lot, ſhould he get me into his power: and I thought I had as good a right to preſerve my happineſs, as that which every individual has to preſerve his life, eſpecially againſt a ſet of ruffians, who were engaged to rob me of it, for a little dirty lucre.

In the midſt of our journey, the footman came up, and told me I was dogg'd; upon which I looked out, and ſeeing a man riding by the chariot-ſide, preſented one of my piſtols out at the window, and preſerved that poſture of defence, until he thought proper to retreat, and rid me of the fears that attended his company. I arrived in town, and changing my equipage, hired an open chaiſe, in which (though I was almoſt ſtarved with cold) I travelled to Reading, which I reached by ten next morning; and from thence proceeded farther in the country, with a view of taking refuge with Mrs. C——, who was my particular friend. Here I ſhould have found

found ſhelter, though my lord had been before-hand with me, and endeavoured to prepoſſeſs her againſt my conduct, had not the houſe been crouded with company, among whom I could not poſſibly have been concealed, eſpecially from her brother, who was an intimate friend of my perſecutor.

Things being thus ſituated, I enjoyed but a very ſhort interview with her, in which her ſorrow and perplexity on my account appeared with great expreſſion in her countenance; and though it was not in her power to afford me the relief I expected, ſhe, in the moſt genteel manner, ſent after me a ſmall ſum of money, thinking that, conſidering the hurry in which I left my houſe, I might have occaſion for it on the road. I was by this time benumbed with cold, fatigued with travelling, and almoſt fretted to death by my diſappointment. However, this was no time to indulge deſpondence; ſince no body could, or would, aſſiſt me, I ſtood the more in need of my own reſolution and preſence of mind. After ſome deliberation, I ſteered my courſe back to London; and being unwilling to return by the ſame road in which I came, as well as impatient to be at the end of my journey, I choſe the Bagſhot way, and ventured to croſs the heath by moon-light.

Here I was attacked by a foot-pad armed with a broad-ſword, who came up, and demanded my money. My ſtock amounted to twelve guineas; and I foreſaw, that ſhould I be ſtripp'd of the whole ſum, I could not travel without diſcovering who I was, and, conſequently, running the riſk of being detected by my purſuer. On theſe conſiderations, I gave the fellow three guineas and

ſome

ſome ſilver; with which he was ſo far from being ſatisfied, that he threatened to ſearch me for more: but I ordered the coachman to proceed, and by good fortune eſcaped that ceremony; though I was under ſome apprehenſion of being overtaken with a piſtol-bullet in my flight, and therefore held down my head in the chaiſe, in imitation of ſome great men, who are ſaid to have ducked in the ſame manner, in the day of battle.

My fears happened to be diſappointed: I lay at an inn upon the road, and next day arrived in town, in the utmoſt difficulty and diſtreſs; for I knew not where to fix my habitation, and was deſtitute of all means of ſupport. In this dilemma, I applied to my lawyer, who recommended me to the houſe of a tradeſman in Weſtminſter, where I lodged and boarded, upon credit, with my faithful Abigail, (whom I ſhall diſtinguiſh by the name of Mrs. S——r) for the ſpace of ten weeks, during which I ſaw nobody, and never once ſtirred abroad.

While I was thus harraſſed out of all enjoyment of life, and reduced to the utmoſt indigence, by the cruelty of my perſecutor, who had even ſtripp'd me of my wearing apparel, I made a conqueſt of lord D——, a nobleman who is now dead, and therefore I ſhall ſay little of his character, which is perfectly well known: this only will I obſerve, that, next to my own tyrant, he was the only perſon of whom I had the greateſt abhorrence. Nevertheleſs, when theſe two came in competition, I preferred the offers of this new lover, which were very conſiderable; and as an aſylum was the chief thing I wanted, agreed to follow him to his country-ſeat, whither

I actually ſent my cloaths, which I had purchaſed upon credit.

However, upon mature deliberation, I changed my mind, and ſignified my reſolution in a letter, deſiring at the ſame time, that my baggage might be ſent back. In conſequence of this meſſage, I expected a viſit from him, in all the rage of indignation and diſappointment, and gave orders, that he ſhould not be admitted into my houſe: yet, notwithſtanding this precaution, he found means to procure entrance; and one of the firſt objects that I ſaw, next morning, in my bedchamber, was my lover, armed with his horſewhip, againſt which (from the knowledge of the man) I did not think myſelf altogether ſecure; though I was not much alarmed, becauſe I believed myſelf ſuperior to him in point of bravery, ſhould the worſt come to the worſt: but, contrary to my expectation, and his uſual behaviour to our ſex, he accoſted me very politely, and began to expoſtulate upon the contents of my letter. I freely told him, that I had raſhly aſſented to his propoſal, for my own convenience only; that when I reflected on what I had done, I thought it ungenerous in me to live with him upon theſe terms; and that, as I did not like him, and could not diſſemble, ſuch a correſpondence could never tend to the ſatisfaction of either. He allowed the inference was juſt, though he was very much chagrined at my previous proceeding: he relinquiſhed his claim, reſtored my cloaths, and never afterwards upbraided me with my conduct in this affair; though he at one time owned, that he ſtill loved me, and ever ſhould, becauſe I had uſed him ill; a declaration that ſtrongly marks the peculiarity of his character.

As

As for my own part, I own that my behaviour on this occaſion, is no other way excuſable, than on account of the miſerable perplexity of my circumſtances, which were often ſo calamitous, that I wonder I have not been compelled to take ſuch ſteps, as would have rendered my conduct much more exceptionable than it really is.

At laſt, all my hopes were blaſted by the iſſue of my ſuit, which was determined in favour of my lord. Even then I refuſed to yield; on the contrary, coming out of retirement, I took lodgings in Suffolk-ſtreet, and ſet my tyrant at defiance. But, being unwilling to truſt my doors to the care of other people, I took an houſe in Conduit-ſtreet; and no ſooner appeared in the world again, than I was ſurrounded by divers and ſundry ſorts of admirers. I believe I received the incenſe and addreſſes of all kinds under the ſun, except that ſort which was moſt to my liking, a man capable of contracting and inſpiring a mutual attachment; but ſuch a one is equally rare and ineſtimable: not but that I own myſelf greatly obliged to all thoſe who cultivated my good graces, though they were very little beholden to me; for, where I did not really love, I could never profeſs that paſſion: that ſort of diſſimulation is a ſlavery that no honeſt nature will undergo. Except one worthy young man whom I ſometimes ſaw, they were a ſtrange medley of inſignificant beings; one was inſipid, another ridiculouſly affected, a third void of all education, a fourth altogether inconſiſtent; and in ſhort, I found as many trifling characters among the men, as ever I obſerved in my own ſex. Some of them I endeavoured to bring over to my maxims, while they attempted to make a proſelyte of me;

but finding the taſk impracticable on both ſides, we very wiſely dropt each other.

At length, however, I was bleſſed with the acquaintance of one nobleman, who is, perhaps, the firſt character in England, in point of honour, integrity, wit, ſenſe and benevolence: when I have thus diſtinguiſhed him, I need ſcarce mention lord ———. This great, this good man, poſſeſſes every accompliſhment requiſite to inſpire admiration, love and eſteem. With infinitely more merit than almoſt ever fell to one man's ſhare, he manifeſts ſuch diffidence of his own qualifications, as cannot fail to prepoſſeſs every company in his favour. He ſeems to obſerve nothing, yet ſees every thing; his manner of telling a ſtory, and making trifles elegant, is peculiar to himſelf; and though he has a thouſand oddities, they ſerve only to make him more agreeable. After what I have ſaid, it may be ſuppoſed that I was enamoured of his perſon: but this was not the caſe; love is altogether capricious and fanciful; yet I admire, honour, and eſteem him to the higheſt degree; and when I obſerve, that his character reſembled that of my dear departed friend Mr. B——; or rather, that Mr. B——, had he lived, would have reſembled lord ——, I pay the higheſt compliment I can conceive both to the living and the dead.

In this nobleman's friendſhip and converſation I thought myſelf happy; though I was, as uſual, expoſed to the indefatigable efforts of my lord, who, one day, while I was favoured with the company of this generous friend, appeared at my door in his coach, attended by another gentleman, who demanded entrance, with an air of authority. A very honeſt footman, who had been

been long in my ſervice, ran up ſtairs in the utmoſt conſternation, and gave me an account of what had happened below. Upon which, I told him he had nothing to anſwer for, and ordered him to keep the door faſt ſhut againſt all oppoſition: though I was ſo much affected with this unexpected aſſault, that lord ——— ſaid, he was never more ſurprized and ſhocked in his life, than at the horror which appeared in my countenance, when I ſaw the coach ſtop at my door.

My little hero being refuſed admittance, went away, threatening to return ſpeedily with a reinforcement; and during this interval, I provided myſelf with a ſoldier, whom I placed centinel at the door withinſide, to guard me from the danger of ſuch aſſaults for the future. My lord, true to his promiſe, marched back with his auxiliaries, reinforced with a conſtable, and repeated his demand of being admitted; and my ſoldier opening the ſaſh, in order to anſwer him according to my directions, he no ſooner perceived the red coat, than he was ſeized with ſuch a pannic, that he inſtantly fled with great precipitation; and when he recounted the adventure, like Falſtaff in the play, multiplied my guard into a whole file of muſqueteers. He alſo made ſhift to diſcover the gentleman, who had been ſo kind as to lend me one of his company, and complained of him to the duke of N———, in hopes of ſeeing him broke for this miſdemeanour; but in that expectation he was luckily diſappointed.

Perceiving that in England I ſhould never enjoy peace, but be continually ſubject to thoſe alarms and diſquiets which had already impaired my health and ſpirits, I reſolved to repair again to France, my beſt refuge and ſure retreat from

the perſecution of my tyrant. Yet, before I took this ſtep, I endeavoured, by the advice of my friends, to conceal myſelf near Windſor; but was in a little time diſcovered by my lord, and hunted out of my lurking place, accordingly. I then removed to Chelſea, where I ſuffered inconceivable uneaſineſs and agitation of mind, from the nature of my ſituation, my tranquillity being thus inceſſantly invaded by a man who could not be ſatisfied with me, and yet could not live without me: ſo that, though I was very much indiſpoſed, I ſet out for France, by the way of the Hague, as the war had ſhut up all other communication, having no other attendant but my woman S—r, who, though ſhe dreaded the ſea, and was upon the brink of matrimony, would not quit me in ſuch a calamitous condition, until I was joined by my footman and other maid, whom I ordered to follow me with the baggage. But, before my departure, I ſent a meſſage to lord ——, demanding my cloaths, which he had ſeized in Eſſex; and he refuſing to deliver them, I was obliged to equip myſelf anew, upon credit.

I was ſupplied with money for my journey by my good friend L——; and after a ſhort and pleaſant paſſage, arrived at the Hague, where I ſtayed two months, and parted with S——r, on whom I ſettled an annuity of five and twenty pounds, payable out of the proviſion which I had or might obtain from my huſband. The ſame allowance had I prevailed upon lord B—— to grant to another maid, who attended me while I lived in his houſe.

I did not much reliſh the people in Holland, becauſe they ſeemed entirely devoted to ſelf-intereſt,

tereſt, without any taſte for pleaſure or politeneſs; a ſpecies of diſpoſition that could not be very agreeable to me, who always deſpiſed money, had an unbounded benevolence of heart, and loved pleaſure beyond every other conſideration. When I ſay pleaſure, I would not be underſtood to mean ſenſuality, which conſtitutes the ſupreme happineſs of thoſe only, who are void of ſentiment and imagination. Nevertheleſs, I received ſome civilities in this place; and among the reſt, the reputation of having for my lover the king of P——'s miniſter, who was young and airy, and viſited me often; circumſtances that were ſufficient to lay me under the imputation of an amour, which I frequently incurred, without having given the leaſt cauſe of ſuſpicion.

Having taken leave of my Dutch friends, I departed from the Hague, in company with an Engliſhwoman, whom I had choſe for that purpoſe, and arrived at Antwerp, with much difficulty and danger, the highway being infeſted with robbers. After having repoſed myſelf a few days in this city, I hired a coach for myſelf, and ſet out, with my companion, for Bruſſels; but, before we reached Mechlin, our vehicle was attacked by two huſſars, who, with their ſabres drawn, obliged the coachman to drive into a wood near the road. I at firſt imagined they wanted to examine our paſſports, but was ſoon too well convinced of their deſign; and though very much ſhocked at the diſcovery, found reſolution enough to ſuppreſs my concern, ſo that it ſhould not aggravate the terrors of the young woman, who had almoſt died with apprehenſion. I even encouraged her to hope for the beſt; and addreſſing myſelf to the robbers in French, begg'd in the moſt ſuppliant manner, that they would

ſpare our lives; upon which, one of them, who was a little fellow, aſſured me in the ſame language, that we had nothing to fear for our perſons.

When we were conveyed in a ſtate of dreadful ſuſpence about three quarters of a mile into the wood, the ruffians came into the coach, and taking my keys, which I kept ready in my hand for them, opened three large trunks, that contained my baggage, and emptying them of every thing but my hoops and a few books, packed up their booty in a cloth; then robbing me of my money and jewels, even to my ſhoe-buckles and ſleeve-buttons, took my footman's laced hat, and gave it, by way of gratification, to a peaſant, who came from behind the buſhes, and aſſiſted them in packing.

This affair being diſpatched, they ordered us to return to the road, by a different way from that in which we were carried into the wood; and mounting their horſes, rode off with the plunder, though not before the little fellow, who was the leaſt ferocious of the two, had come and ſhaken me by the hand, wiſhing us a good journey; a compliment which I heartily returned, being extremely well pleaſed at the retreat of two ſuch companions, who had detained us a whole half hour; during which, notwithſtanding the aſſurance I had received, I was in continual apprehenſion of ſeeing their operation conclude with the murder of us all; for I ſuppoſed they were of that gang, who had ſome time before murthered a French officer, and uſed a lady extremely ill, after having rifled her of all ſhe had.

Having thus undergone pillage, and being reduced to the extremity of indigence in a foreign land,

land, it is not to be ſuppoſed that my reflections were very comfortable; and yet, though I ſuſtained the whole damage, I was the only perſon in the company who bore the accident with any reſolution and preſence of mind. My coachman and valet ſeemed quite petrified with fear; and it was not, till I had repeated my directions, that the former drove farther into the wood, and took the firſt turning to the right, in order to regain the road, according to the command of the robbers, which I did not chooſe to diſobey.

This misfortune I ſuffered by the miſinformation I received at Antwerp, where I would have provided myſelf with an eſcort, had I not been aſſured, that there was not the leaſt occaſion to put myſelf to ſuch extraordinary expence: and indeed, the robbers took the only half hour in which they could have had an opportunity of plundering us; for we no ſooner returned into the Highway, than we met with the French artillery coming from Bruſſels, which was a ſecurity to us, during the reſt of our journey. We were afterwards informed at a ſmall village, that there was actually a large gang of deſerters, who harboured in that wood, from which they made excurſions in the neighbourhood, and kept the peaſants in continual alarms.

Having proceeded a little way, we were ſtopp'd by the artillery croſſing a bridge; and as the train was very long, muſt have been detained till night, had not a ſoldier informed me, that if I would take the trouble to come out of my coach, and apply to the commandant, he would order them to halt, and allow me to paſs. I took the man's advice, and was by him conducted, with much difficulty, through the croud to ſome of-

ficers, who ſeemed ſcarce to deſerve the name; for, when I ſignified my requeſt, they neither roſe up, nor deſired me to ſit down; but lolling in their chairs, with one leg ſtretched out, aſked, with an air of diſreſpectful raillery, where I was going; and when I anſwered, "To Paris;" deſired to know what I would do there.

I, who am naturally civil where I am civilly uſed, and ſaucy enough where I think myſelf treated with diſregard, was very much piqued at their inſolent and unmannerly behaviour, and began to reply to their impertinent queſtions, very abruptly; ſo that a very tart dialogue would have enſued, had not the converſation been interrupted by a tall, thin, genteel young French nobleman, an officer in the army, who chancing to come in, aſked with great politeneſs, what I would pleaſe to have. I then repeated my deſire, and produced my paſſports, by which he learn'd who I was. He immediately gave orders, that my coach ſhould paſs; and afterwards viſited me at Paris, having obtained my permiſſion, and taken my addreſs at parting; while the others, underſtanding my name and quality, aſked pardon for their impolite carriage, which they told me was owing to the repreſentation of the ſoldier, who gave them to underſtand, that I was a ſtrolling actreſs.

I could not help laughing heartily at this miſtake, which might have proceeded from the circumſtances of my appearance, my footman having been obliged to change hats with the peaſant, and myſelf being without buckles in my ſhoes, and buttons in my riding-ſhirt, while my countenance ſtill retained marks of the fear and confuſion I had undergone. After all, perhaps the fellow

low was a droll, and wanted to entertain himſelf at my expence.

The day was ſo far conſumed in theſe adventures, that I was obliged to take up my lodging at Mechlin, where I addreſſed myſelf to the intendant, giving him an account of the diſaſter I had met with, and deſiring I might have credit at the inn, as our whole company could not raiſe the value of a ſix-pence. This gentleman, tho' a provincial, was polite in his way, and not only granted my requeſt, but invited me to lodge at his own houſe. I accordingly gave him my company at ſupper, but did not chooſe to ſleep in his quarters, becauſe he appeared to be what the French call *un vieux debauché*.

Next day, he ſent a trumpet to the general, with a detail of my misfortune, in hopes of retrieving what I had loſt; but, notwithſtanding all poſſible ſearch, I was fain to put up with my damage, which, in linen, laces, cloaths and baubles, amounted to upwards of ſeven hundred pounds: a loſs which never deprived me of one moment's reſt; for though I lodged at a miſerable inn, and lay in a paultry bed, I ſlept as ſound as if nothing extraordinary had happened, after I had written to London and Paris, directing that the payment of my bills of credit might be ſtopp'd. Indeed, I know but of two misfortunes in life, capable of depreſſing my ſpirits, namely, the loſs of health and friends; all others may be prevented, or endured. The articles of that calamity, which I chiefly regretted, were a picture of lord W——m, and ſome inimitable letters from Mr. B——.

From Mechlin I proceeded to Bruſſels, where being known, I got credit for ſome neceſſaries,

and borrowed twenty guineas, to defray the expence of my journey to Paris. Having conſulted with my friends, about the ſafeſt method of travelling through Flanders, I was perſuaded to take places in the public Voiture; and accordingly departed, not without fears of finding one part of the country as much infeſted with robbers as another. Nor were theſe apprehenſions aſſuaged by the converſation of my fellow-travellers, who being of the lower ſort of people, that delight in exaggerating dangers, entertained me all the way, with an account of all the robberies and murders which had been committed on that road, with many additional circumſtances of their own invention.

After having been two days expoſed to this comfortable converſation, among very diſagreeable company, which is certainly one of the moſt diſagreeable ſituations in life, I arrived at Liſle, where, thinking the dangerous part of the journey was now paſt, I hired a poſt-chaiſe, and in two days more reached Paris, without any farther moleſtation.

Upon my arrival in this capital, I was immediately viſited by my old acquaintances, who hearing my diſaſter, offered me their cloaths, and inſiſted upon my wearing them, until I could be otherwiſe provided. They likewiſe engaged me in parties, with a view of amuſing my imagination, that I might not grow melancholy in reflecting upon my loſs; and deſired me to repeat the particulars of my ſtory forty times over, expreſſing great ſurprize at our not being murthered, or raviſhed at leaſt. As for this laſt ſpecies of outrage, the fear of it never once entered my head, otherwiſe I ſhould have been more

ſhocked

ſhocked and alarmed than I really was: but it ſeems this was the chief circumſtance of my companion's apprehenſion; and I cannot help obſerving, that an homely woman is always more apt to entertain thoſe fears, than one whoſe perſon expoſes her to much more imminent danger. However, I now learned, that the riſk I ran was much greater than I imagined it to be, thoſe ruffians being familiarized to rape as well as murder.

Soon after my appearance in Paris, I was favoured with the addreſſes of ſeveral French lovers; but I never had any taſte for foreigners, or indeed for any amuſement of that kind, except ſuch as were likely to be laſting, and ſettled upon a more agreeable footing than that of common gallantry. When I deviated from this principle, my conduct was the effect of compulſion, and therefore I was never eaſy under it, having been reduced to the alternative of two evils, the leaſt of which I was obliged to chooſe, as a man leaps into the ſea, in order to eſcape from a ſhip that is on fire.

Though I rejected their love, I did not refuſe their company and converſation; and though my health was conſiderably impaired by the ſhock I received in my laſt adventure, which was conſiderably greater than I at firſt imagined, and affected my companion ſo much, that ſhe did not recover her ſpirits, till ſhe returned to England: I ſay, though I was for ſome time a valetudinarian, I enjoyed myſelf in great tranquillity for the ſpace of ten months, during which I was viſited by Engliſh, Scotch, and French, of all parties and perſuaſions; for pleaſure is of no faction, and that was the chief object of my purſuit; neither was I ſo ambitious of being a politician, as to

employ my time and thoughts upon ſubjects which I did not underſtand. I had admirers of all ſides, and ſhould have ſpent my time very much to my liking, had not I felt my funds ſenſibly diminiſh, without any proſpect of their being repaired; for I had been obliged to lay out a great part of the ſum allotted for my ſubſiſtence, in ſupplying my companion, my ſervant and myſelf with neceſſaries, in lieu of thoſe which we had loſt.

Having before mine eyes the uncomfortable proſpect of wanting money in a ſtrange place, I found myſelf under the neceſſity of returning to England, where I had more reſources than I could poſſibly have among foreigners; and with that view wrote to lord ——'s agents, deſiring that I might be enabled to diſcharge my obligations at Paris, by the payment of my pin-money. Thus a negotiation commenced, and his lordſhip promiſed to remit money for the clearance of my Paris debts, which amounted to four hundred pounds: but he would not advance one farthing more, though I gave him to underſtand, that while he protracted the agreement, I muſt inevitably be adding to my incumbrances, and that I ſhould be as effectually detained by a debt of twenty pounds, as if I owed a thouſand. Notwithſtanding all my repreſentations, he would not part with one ſhilling over the neat ſum which I had at firſt ſtipulated; ſo that all my meaſures were rendered abortive, and I found it altogether impracticable to execute thoſe reſolutions I had formed in his favour.

Thus did he, for a meer trifle, embarraſs the woman for whom he profeſſes the moſt unlimited love, and whoſe principles he pretends to hold in the

the utmoſt veneration. Indeed his confidence in my integrity is not without foundation; for many wives, with one half of my provocation, would have ruined him to all intents and purpoſes; whereas, notwithſtanding all the extraordinary expences, to which I have been expoſed by his continual perſecution, he never paid a ſhilling on my account, except one thouſand pounds, excluſive of the ſmall allowance which was my due. In a word, ſo much time elapſed before my lord could prevail upon himſelf to advance the bare four hundred, that I was involved in freſh difficulties, from which I found it impoſſible to extricate myſelf: and though I had occaſion to write a letter to my benefactor lord ——, in which I expreſſed my acknowledgment for paſt favours, I could not venture to ſollicit more; even when I was encouraged by a very obliging anſwer, wherein he declared, that the good qualities of my mind and heart, would bind him to me in friendſhip for ever.

While I ruminated on my uncomfortable ſituation, which would neither permit me to return to England, nor to ſtay much longer where I was, a young Engliſhman of immenſe fortune took Paris in his way from Italy, accompanied by a moſt agreeable Scotchman of very good ſenſe and great vivacity. It was my good or ill fortune to become acquainted with theſe gentlemen, who having ſeen me at the opera, expreſſed a deſire of being known to me, and accordingly favoured me with a viſit one afternoon, when the briſk North Briton ingroſſed the whole converſation; while the other ſeemed fearful and diffident even to a degree of baſhfulneſs, through which, however, I could diſcern a delicate ſenſibility and

and uncommon underſtanding: there was in his perſon (which was very agreeable) as well as in his behaviour, a certain *naivetè* that was very pleaſing; and at this firſt interview, we reliſhed each other's company ſo well, that a ſort of intimacy immediately commenced, and was carried on in a ſucceſſion of parties of pleaſure, in the courſe of which I found him fraught with all the tenderneſs and ſentiment that render the heart ſuſceptible of the moſt refined love; a diſpoſition that immediately made me partial to him, while it ſubjected his own heart to all the violent impreſſions of a paſſion, which I little imagined our correſpondence would have produced.

Nevertheleſs, I was far from being diſpleaſed with my conqueſt, becauſe his perſon and qualifications, as well as his manner of addreſs, were very much to my liking, and recommended him in a particular manner to my affection. Indeed, he made a greater progreſs in my heart than I myſelf ſuſpected; for there was ſomething congenial in our ſouls, which from our firſt meeting I believe had attracted us (unknown to ourſelves) under the notions of friendſhip and regard, and now diſcloſed itſelf in the moſt paſſionate love.

I liſtened to his addreſſes, and we were truly happy. His attachment was the quinteſſence of tenderneſs and ſincerity, while his generoſity knew no bounds. Not contented with having paid twelve hundred pounds on my account, in the ſpace of one fortnight, he would have loaded me with preſent after preſent, had not I abſolutely refuſed to accept ſuch expenſive marks of his munificence. I was even mortified at thoſe inſtances of his liberality, which my ſituation compelled me to receive, leſt, being but little ac-

acquainted with my diſpoſition, he ſhould ſuſpect me of being intereſted in my love, and judge my conduct by the malicious reports of common fame, which (he afterwards owned) had at firſt obtained ſuch credit with him, that he believed our mutual attachment would not be of long duration. But, in this particular, he was ſoon undeceived: his heart, though naturally adapted for the melting paſſion, had hitherto eſcaped untouched by all the ladies of Italy and France; and therefore the firſt impreſſions were the more deeply fixed. As he was unpractiſed in the ways of common gallantry and deceit, the ſtriking ſimplicity in his character was the more likely to engage the heart of one who knew the perfidy of the world, and deſpiſed all the farce and bombaſt of faſhionable profeſſion, which I had always conſidered as the phraſe of vanity and oſtentation, rather than the genuine language of love. Beſides, gratitude had a conſiderable ſhare in augmenting my affection, which manifeſted itſelf in ſuch a warm, cordial, artleſs manner, as increaſed his eſteem, and rivetted his attachment; for he could eaſily perceive, from the whole tenour of my conduct, that my breaſt was an utter ſtranger to craft and diſſimulation: yet I was at firſt fearful of contracting any engagement with him, becauſe, being younger than me, he might be the more apt to change, and the world might be malicious enough to ſuppoſe I had practiſed upon his inexperience; but, conſcious of my own integrity, I ſet ſlander at defiance, truſting to my own behaviour, and his natural probity, for the continuance of his love. Though we did not live together in the ſame houſe, the greateſt part of our time was ſpent in each other's com-

company; we dined and ſupped at the ſame table, frequented public places, went upon parties to the country, and never parted, but for a few hours in the night, which we paſſed in the utmoſt impatience to meet again.

In this agreeable manner did the days roll on, when my felicity was interrupted by a fit of jealouſy with which I happened to be ſeized. I had contracted an acquaintance with a young married lady, who, though her perſonal attractions were but ſlender, was, upon the whole, an agreeable, chearful, good-natured companion, with a little daſh of the coquette in her compoſition. This woman being in very indigent circumſtances, occaſioned by ſome loſſes her huſband had ſuſtained, no ſooner had an opportunity of ſeeing and converſing with my lover, than ſhe formed the deſign of making a conqueſt of him. I ſhould have forgiven her for this ſcheme, whatever pangs it might have coſt me, had I believed it the effect of real paſſion; but I knew her too well, to ſuppoſe her heart was ſuſceptible of love, and accordingly reſented it. In the execution of her plan, ſhe neglected nothing which ſhe thought capable of engaging his attention. She took all opportunities of ſitting near him at table, ogled him in the moſt palpable manner, directed her whole diſcourſe to him, trod upon his toes; nay, I believe, ſqueezed his hand. My blood boiled at her, though my pride, for ſome time, enabled me to conceal my uneaſineſs; till at length her behaviour became ſo arrogant and groſs, that I could no longer ſuppreſs my indignation, and one day told my lover, that I would immediately renounce his correſpondence.

He was greatly alarmed at this unexpected declaration; and when he underſtood the cauſe of it, aſſured me, that for the future he would never exchange one word with her. Satisfied with this mark of his ſincerity and regard, I releaſed him from this promiſe, which he could not poſſibly keep, while ſhe and I lived upon any terms; and we continued to viſit each other as uſual, though ſhe ſtill perſiſted in her endeavours to rival me in his affection, and contracted an intimacy with his companion, who ſeemed to entertain a paſſion for her, that ſhe might have the more frequent opportunities of being among us; for ſhe had no objection againſt favouring the addreſſes of both. One evening, I remember, we ſet out in my coach for the opera; and in the way, this inamorata was ſo buſy with her feet, that I was incenſed at her behaviour; and when we arrived at the place, refuſed to alight; but, ſetting them down, declared my intention of returning home immediately. She was ſo much pleaſed with this intimation, that ſhe could not conceal the joy ſhe felt at the thoughts of converſing with him, uninterrupted by my preſence; an opportunity with which I had never favoured her before. This open exultation increaſed my anger and anxiety: I went home; but, being ſtill tortured with the reflection of having left them together, adjuſted myſelf in the glaſs, though I was too angry to take notice of my own figure, and without farther delay returned to the opera.

Having inquired for the box in which they ſat, I took poſſeſſion of one that fronted them, and reconnoitring them, without being perceived, had the ſatisfaction of ſeeing him removed to as great a diſtance from her as the place would permit,

mit, and his head turned another way. Compoſed by this examination, I joined them without further ſcruple, when my young gentleman expreſſed great joy at my appearance, and told me he was determined to have left the entertainment, and come in queſt of me, had not I returned at that inſtant.

In our way homewards, my rival repeated her uſual hints, and with her large hoop almoſt overſhadowed my lover from my view: upon which my jealouſy and wrath recurred with ſuch violence, that I pulled the ſtring, as a ſignal for the coachman to ſtop, with a view of getting out, and going home afoot; a ſtep which would have afforded a new ſpectacle to the people of Paris. But I reflected, in a moment, upon the folly of ſuch a reſolution, and ſoon recollected myſelf, by calling my pride to my aſſiſtance. I determined, however, that ſhe ſhould act no more ſcenes of this kind in my preſence, and that ſame night inſiſted upon my lover's dropping all intercourſe and connexion with this tormentor. He very chearfully complied with my deſire, and was even glad of an occaſion to break off his acquaintance with a perſon about whom I had plagued him ſo much.

Thus was I freed from the perſecution of one of thoſe creatures, who, tho' of little conſequence in themſelves, are yet the peſts of ſociety, and find means to deſtroy that harmony which reigns between two lovers, by the intruſion of a looſe appetite, void of all ſenſibility and diſcretion: having no feeling themſelves, they cannot ſympathize with that of other people, and do miſchief out of meer wantonneſs.

My

My lover being obliged to go to England, had ſettled me in a genteel houſe in Paris, with a view of returning when his affairs ſhould be adjuſted; but when the time of his departure approached, he began to be uneaſy at the proſpect of ſeparation, and, in order to alleviate his anxiety, deſired me to accompany him to Calais, where we ſtayed together three or four days, during which the dread of parting became more and more intenſe: ſo that we determined upon my following him into England, by the firſt opportunity, where I ſhould live altogether *incog*, that I might be concealed from the inquiries and attempts of my lord. Even after this reſolution was fixed, we parted with all the agonies of lovers who deſpair of ever meeting again; and the wind blowing very high after he had imbarked, increaſed my fears. But by the return of the packet-boat, I was bleſſed with the report of his being ſafe arrived in England, and had the ſatisfaction of peruſing his letters by every poſt.

My admirer being thus detached from me, my thoughts were intirely employed in concerting ſome private method of conveying myſelf to him. As I would not truſt myſelf in the common packet, for fear of being diſcovered, after having revolved divers ſchemes, I determined to tranſport myſelf in one of the Dutch fiſhing-boats, tho' I knew the paſſage would be hazardous; but, in a caſe of ſuch intereſting concern, I overlooked all danger and inconvenience. Before I put this reſolution in practice, I was ſo fortunate as to hear of a ſmall Engliſh veſſel that arrived at Calais with a priſoner of war, in which I embarked with my companion, and another lady, who lived with me for ſome time afterwards; and

and when we came on board, diſcovered that the ſhip was no other than a light collier, and that her whole company amounted to no more than three men. Nevertheleſs, tho' the ſea was ſo rough, and the weather ſo unpromiſing, that no other boat would venture to put to ſea, we ſet ſail, and between two ſtorms, in about three hours arrived in ſafety at Dover.

From hence my firſt companion went to her friends, in the ſtage-coach, while the other lady and I hired an open poſt-chaiſe (tho' it ſnowed very hard) and without any accident performed our journey to London, where I met with my lover, who flew to my arms in all the tranſports of impatient joy; and, doubtleſs, I deſerved his affection, for the hardſhips, perils, and difficulties I had undergone to be with him; for I never ſcrupled to undertake any thing practicable, in order to demonſtrate the ſincerity of what I profeſſed.

In conſequence of our plan, I aſſumed a fictitious name, and never appeared in publick, being fully ſatisfied and happy in the company and converſation of the man I loved; and when he went into the country, contented myſelf with his correſpondence, which he punctually maintained, in a ſeries of letters equally ſenſible, ſincere and affectionate.

Upon his return to town for the remainder of the ſeaſon, he devoted the greateſt part of his time to our mutual enjoyment; left me with reluctance, when he was called away by indiſpenſible buſineſs, and the civility which was due to his acquaintance, and very ſeldom went to any place of publick entertainment, becauſe I could not accompany and ſhare with him in the diverſion: nay,

ſo

ſo much did I ingroſs his attention, that one evening, after he had been teized into an agreement of meeting ſome friends at a play, he went thither preciſely at the appointed hour, and as they did not arrive punctually at the very minute, he returned to me immediately, as much rejoiced at his eſcape as if he had met with ſome ſignal deliverance. Nor was his conſtancy inferior to the ardour of his love: we went once together to a ball in the Hay-market, where, in the midſt of a thouſand fine women, whoſe charms were inhanced by the peculiarity of the dreſſes they wore, he remained unſhaken, unſeduced, preſerving his attachment for me, in ſpite of all temptation.

In the ſummer he provided me with a houſe in the neighbourhood of his own; but the accommodations being bad, and that country affording no other place fit for my reſidence, he brought me home to his own ſeat, and by that ſtep raiſed an univerſal clamour, tho' I ſaw no company, and led ſuch a ſolitary life, that nothing but exceſſive love could have ſupported my ſpirits: not but that he gave me as much of his time as he could poſſibly ſpare from the neceſſary duties of paying and receiving viſits, together with the avocations of hunting, and other country amuſements, which I could not partake. Formerly, indeed, I uſed to hunt and ſhoot, but I had left off both; ſo that I was now reduced to the alternative of reading and walking by myſelf: but, *Love made up for all deficiencies to me, who think nothing elſe worth the living for!—Had I been bleſſed with a partner for life, who could have loved ſincerely, and inſpired me with a mutual flame, I would have aſked no more of fate. Intereſt and ambition have no ſhare in my compoſition;*

love

love which is pleaſure, or pleaſure which is love, makes up the whole. A heart ſo diſpoſed cannot be devoid of other good qualities; it muſt be ſubject to the impreſſions of humanity and benevolence, and enemy to nothing but itſelf. This you will give me leave to affirm, in juſtice to myſelf, as I have frankly owned my failings and miſconduct.

Towards the end of ſummer my heart was a little alarmed by a report that prevailed, of my lover's being actually engaged in a treaty of marriage: however, I gave little credit to this rumour, till I was obliged to go to town about buſineſs, and there I heard the ſame information confidently affirmed. Tho' I ſtill conſidered it as a vague ſurmiſe, I wrote to him an account of what I had heard; and in his anſwer, which is ſtill in my poſſeſſion, he aſſured me, with repeated vows and proteſtations, that the report was altogether falſe. Satisfied with this declaration, I returned to his houſe; and tho' the tale was inceſſantly thundered in my ears, ſtill believed it void of all foundation, till my ſuſpicion was awaked by a very inconſiderable circumſtance.

One day, on his return from hunting, I perceived he had a very fine pair of Dreſden ruffles on his ſhirt, which I could not ſuppoſe he would wear at ſuch a ruſtic exerciſe; and therefore my fears immediately took the alarm. When I queſtioned him about this particular of his dreſs, his colour changed; and tho' he attempted to elude my ſuſpicion, by imputing it to a miſtake of his ſervant, I could not reſt ſatisfied with this account of the matter, but inquired into the truth with ſuch eagerneſs and penetration, that he could not deny he had been to make a viſit; and,

and, by degrees, I even extorted from him a confeſſion, that he had engaged himſelf farther than he ought to have proceeded, without making me acquainted with his deſign, tho' he endeavoured to excuſe his conduct, and pacify my diſpleaſure, by ſaying that the affair would not be brought to bear for a great while, and perhaps might never come to a determination: but he was in great confuſion, and indeed hardly knew what he ſaid.

I would have quitted his houſe that moment, had not he, before-hand, obtained a promiſe that I would take no raſh reſolution of that kind, and put it out of my power to procure any method of conveyance by which I could make my retreat. I gave no vent to reproaches, and only upbraided him with his having permitted me to return in ignorance to the country, after I was once fairly gone: upon which he ſwore that he could not bear the thoughts of parting with me. This declaration was a myſtery at that time, but I have been ſince ſo fully ſatisfied of his reaſons for his conduct, that I heartily acquit him of all injuſtice to me. And indeed, it is my ſincere opinion, that if ever young man deſerved to be happy, he is certainly intitled to that privilege; and, if I may be allowed to judge, has an heart ſuſceptible of the moſt refined enjoyment.

The violence of the grief and conſternation which I ſuffered from this ſtroke, having a little ſubſided, I deliberated with myſelf about the meaſures I ſhould take, and determined to leave his houſe ſome day when he ſhould be abroad. I

was encouraged in this reſolution by the advice of our Scotch friend, who came about this time from London, on a viſit to his fellow-traveller: we thought ſuch an abrupt departure would be leſs ſhocking than to ſtay and take a formal leave of my lover, whoſe heart was of ſuch a delicate frame, that after I told him I ſhould one day withdraw myſelf, in his abſence, he never came home from the chace, or any other avocation, without trembling with apprehenſion that I had eſcaped.

After he had been ſome time accuſtomed to theſe fears by my previous intimation, I at length decamped, in good earneſt, tho' my heart aked upon the occaſion, becauſe I left him loving and beloved; for his affection was evident, notwithſtanding the ſtep he had taken, by the advice and importunity of all his relations, who laid a diſagreeable reſtraint upon his inclinations, while they conſulted his intereſt in every other particular.

While I halted in the next great town, until I could be ſupplied with freſh horſes, I was viſited by a gentleman who had been formerly intimate with my lover; but a breach had happened in their friendſhip, and he now came to complain of the treatment he had received. Perceiving that I was not in a humour to liſten to his ſtory, he ſhifted the converſation to my own, and obſerved, that I had been extremely ill uſed. I told him I was of a different opinion: that it was not only juſt, but expedient, that a young man of Mr. ———'s fortune ſhould think of making ſome alliance to ſtrengthen and ſupport the

the intereſt of his family; and that I had nothing to accuſe him of but his letting me remain ſo long in ignorance of his intention. He then gave me to underſtand, that I was ſtill ignorant of a great part of the ill uſage I had received, affirming, that while I lived in his houſe, he had amuſed himſelf with all the common women in that town, to ſome of whom this gentleman had perſonally introduced him.

At firſt, I could not believe this imputation; but he ſupported his aſſertions with ſo many convincing circumſtances, that I could no longer doubt the truth of them; and I felt ſo much reſentment, that my love vaniſhed immediately into air. Inſtead of proceeding in my journey to London, I went back a conſiderable way, and ſent a meſſage, deſiring to ſee him in a little houſe, about mid-way between his own habitation and the town from whence I came. He obeyed my ſummons, and appeared at the place appointed, where I reproached him with great bitterneſs. He pleaded guilty to the charge, ſo far as acknowledging that he had correſponded with other women lately, in order to get the better of his affection for me, but the experiment had failed, and he found that he ſhould be for ever miſerable.

I did not look upon this candid confeſſion as a ſufficient atonement for his paſt diſſimulation, and, in the ſharpneſs of my revenge, demanded a ſettlement, which he peremptorily refuſed; ſo that, for the preſent, we held each other in the utmoſt contempt. Indeed, I afterwards deſpiſed myſelf for my condeſcenſion, which was owing to the advice of my companion, ſupported and inflamed by the ſpirit of reſentment. Neverthe-

leſs, he begged that I would return to his houſe, or ſtay all night where I was; but I was deaf to his intreaties, and, after a great deal of ironical civility on my ſide, I took my leave, and went away; yet, before I ſet out, I looked back, and ſaw him on horſeback, with ſuch an air of ſimplicity and truth, as called up a profound ſigh, notwithſtanding all that had paſſed in our converſation.

Upon my arrival in London, I took lodgings in Leiceſter-Fields, and anſwered a letter which I had ſome months before received from my lord; telling him, that I would go home to him, without ſtipulating for any terms, to try what effect my confidence would have upon his generoſity. He readily embraced the offer, and took an houſe in St. James's ſtreet, where I propoſed to comply with his humour in every thing that was conſiſtent with my own peace and tranquillity.

Mean while, my lover paſſed his time very diſagreeably in the country, with his friend, of whom (it ſeems) he had conceived ſome jealouſy, which was increaſed by a letter I wrote to that gentleman, till he was made acquainted with the contents, which he read over forty times; and then his paſſion breaking out with more violence than ever, he not only expreſſed his feeling, in an epiſtle which I immediately received, but when he came to town, ſuffered ſuch agonies of deſpair as I had never ſeen before, except in lord B——. It was then in my power to have taken ample revenge upon him, as well as upon my inſolent rival, who had inſiſted upon my leaving his houſe, in a very abrupt manner, tho' he abſolutely refuſed to gratify her malice; for he was

now

now diſpoſed to do any thing for my ſatisfaction: but I knew his worth, and had too much regard for his reputation to adviſe him to act inconſiſtent with his honour.

About this time, many tender meetings and ſorrowful partings happened between us, till the marriage-knot was tied, when he ſent me a bank-note for a thouſand pounds, by way of ſpecimen (as he called it) of his friendſhip, and of what he would do for me, ſhould I ever want his aſſiſtance. This mark of his generoſity I received in a moſt tender billet, which I ſhall never part with, together with his picture ſet in diamonds.

I now employed my thoughts in keeping meaſures with my lord; we lay in the ſame apartment, and for the firſt four or five months I neither dined nor ſupped abroad, above twice; and then he knew where I was, and approved of my company. But all this complacency and circumſpection had no effect upon his temper, which remained as capricious and diſſatisfied as ever. Nay, to ſuch a provoking degree did this unhappy humour prevail, that one day, in the preſence of his lawyer, he harrangued upon my miſconduct ſince our laſt re-union; and very freely affirmed, that every ſtep I had taken was diametrically oppoſite to his will.

Conſcious of the pains I had been at to pleaſe him, I was ſo incenſed at theſe unjuſt invectives, that ſtarting up, I told him he was a little dirty fellow; and would have left the houſe immediately, had not his lawyer, and others, who were in the next room, interpoſed, and by dint of argument and importunity diverted me from my purpoſe. By the bye, I have been informed

by a perſon of rank, that my lord diſcovered exactly the ſame diſpoſition in his father's life-time, and only changes the ſubject of his complaint from the word *father* to that of *wife*. Indeed he takes all opportunities of plaguing my dear parent, as he has juſt ſagacity enough to know, that this is the moſt effectual way he can take to diſtreſs me.

After repeated trials, I have given up all hopes of making him happy, or of finding myſelf eaſy in my ſituation; and live with him at preſent to avoid a greater inconvenience. Not that his ill-nature is all the grievance of which I complain: excluſive of the perſonal diſguſt I entertain for him, his folly is of that ſpecies which diſobliges rather than diverts, and his vanity and affectation altogether intolerable; for he actually believes himſelf, or at leaſt would impoſe himſelf upon mankind, as a pattern in gallantry and taſte; and, in point of buſineſs, a perſon of infinite ſagacity and penetration: but the moſt ridiculous part of his character is his pretended talent for politics, in which he ſo deeply concerns himſelf, that he has diſmiſſed many a good ſervant, becauſe he ſuſpected him of having wrong connexions; a theme upon which he has often quarrelled with me, even almoſt to parting, accuſing me of holding correſpondence with the earls of B— and C—, and Mr. H— V— tho' I never had the leaſt acquaintance with any of theſe gentlemen, except the earl of C——, to whom I have not ſpoke for theſe ten years paſt.

In ſhort, I have often been at a loſs to know, whether he was more mad or malicious in thoſe fits of enthuſiaſm, wherein he ſeemed tranſported with zeal for the commonwealth, and tormented

mented me with his admonitions, out of all temper and patience. At length, however, I contrived an expedient which freed me from theſe troubleſome expoſtulations, and ſilenced him effectually on the ſcore of politicks. This was no other than an open avowal of being connected with all thoſe people whom I have named. Indeed, I knew him too well to believe there was any thing ſolid in his intention or profeſſions, even when he carried them ſo far as to demand a private audience of the K—, in order to communicate a ſcheme for ſuppreſſing the rebellion; and that being denied, ſollicited the duke of D——'s intereſt, for permiſſion to raiſe and head a regiment of Kentiſh ſmugglers: nay, to ſuch a pitch did his loyalty ſoar, that he purchaſed a firelock of particular mechaniſm, calculated for the ſafety of the bearer, in caſe he had been placed centinel at his majeſty's door; and kept his horſes ready capariſoned, with a view of attending his ſovereign to the field. Notwithſtanding all theſe pompous preparations, had he been put to the proof, he would have infallibly crept out of his engagements, thro' ſome ſneaking evaſion, his imagination being very fertile in ſuch ſaving pretences. Yet he will talk ſometimes ſo fervently, and even ſenſibly, on the ſubject, that a ſtranger would miſtake him for a man of underſtanding, and determined zeal for the good of his country.

Since my laſt return to his houſe, that act of parliament paſſed, by which he was enabled to pay his debts, and among the reſt, a thouſand pounds of my contracting, the only burden of that kind I ever intailed upon him, excluſive of my pin-money, which was never regularly paid;

nor would he have been ſubject to this, had he not, by his perſecution and purſuit, expoſed me to an extraordinary expence. I have alſo had it in my power to reward ſome of my faithful Abigails; in particular, to relieve from extreme diſtreſs that maid to whom (as I have already obſerved) lord B— granted an annuity, which ſhe had ſold: ſo that ſhe was reduced to the moſt abject poverty, and I found her in a diſmal hole, with two infants, periſhing for want; a ſpectacle which drew tears from my eyes, and indeed could not but make a deep impreſſion upon an heart like mine, which the miſery of my fellow-creatures never failed to melt.

Nor did I, upon this occaſion, forget the attachment and fidelity of my other woman Mrs. S—, who hearing I was robbed in my paſſage thro' Flanders, had generouſly relinquiſhed the allowance I had ſettled upon her at parting. The exerciſe of ſuch acts of humanity and benevolence, and the pleaſure of ſeeing my dear and tender parent often, in ſome meaſure alleviate the chagrin to which I am ſubject, from the diſagreeable diſpoſition of my lord, who, conſiſtent with his former inconſiſtency, upon our laſt reconciliation chearfully agreed to a propoſal I made of having concerts in the houſe, and even approved of the ſcheme with marks of particular ſatisfaction: but before one half of the winter was expired, he found means to baniſh all the company, beginning with lord R— B—, who, as he walked up ſtairs one evening, was ſtopped by a footman, who plainly told him he had orders to ſay to him in particular, that his lordſhip was not at home: yet the very next day perceiving that nobleman and me walking together in the park, he joined us with an air of alacrity, as

if

if no ſuch thing had happened, and even behaved to lord R—— with the moſt fawning complaiſance. His deportment was equally abſurd and impertinent to the reſt of our friends, who forſook us gradually, being tired of maintaining any friendly communication with ſuch a diſagreeable compoſition of ignorance and arrogance. For my own part, I look upon him as utterly incorrigible; and as fate hath ſubjected me to his power, endeavour to make the bitter draught go down, by detaching myſelf, as much as poſſible, from the ſuppoſition that there is any ſuch exiſtence upon earth. Indeed, if I had not fatal experience of the contrary, I ſhould be apt to believe that ſuch a character is not to be found among the ſons of men; becauſe his conduct is altogether unaccountable by the known rules and maxims of life, and falls intirely under the poet's obſervation, when he ſays,

'Tis true, no meaning puzzles more than wit.

Her ladyſhip having thus concluded her ſtory, to the entertainment of the company, and the admiration of Peregrine, who expreſſed his aſtoniſhment at the variety of adventure ſhe had undergone, which was ſuch as he thought ſufficient to deſtroy the moſt hardy and robuſt conſtitution, and therefore infinitely more than enough to overwhelm one of her delicate frame; one of the gentlemen preſent, roundly taxed her with want of candour, in ſuppreſſing ſome circumſtances of her life, which he thought eſſential in the conſideration of her character.

She reddened at this peremptory charge, which had an evident effect upon the countenances of the whole audience, when the accuſer proceeded

to explain his imputation, by obſerving, that, in the courſe of her narration, ſhe had omitted to mention a thouſand acts of uncommon charity, of which he himſelf knew her to be guilty; that ſhe had concealed a great many advantageous propoſals of marriage, which ſhe might have accepted, before ſhe was engaged; that ſhe had not ſpoke one word of her firſt huſband's debts, which, to his certain knowledge, ſhe had paid out of her own privy purſe, after her ſecond marriage, and on that account received the thanks of lord W——'s elder brother, who, though he had undertaken to diſcharge them, delayed the execution of his purpoſe longer than ſhe thought they ſhould remain unpaid: and that, in relating her inducements for leaving Mr. S—, (whether out of forgetfulneſs, or from tenderneſs to a lover once ſo dear to her, he would not pretend to ſay) ſhe had omitted a very cogent motive for her own conduct; for as he had firſt courted her favour in her riſing fortune, and left her in its decline, ſhe could not avoid reflecting, that, after this precipitate re-engagement, when the firſt tranſports of their meeting were over, he would again act the ſame conduct, as ſoon as her tranquillity ſhould be diſturbed by the perſecution of her lord.

The company were agreeably undeceived by this explanation; which her ladyſhip acknowledged in very polite terms, as a compliment equally genteel and unexpected: and our hero, after having teſtified the ſenſe he had of her complaiſance and condeſcenſion, in regaling him with ſuch a mark of her confidence and eſteem, took his leave, and went home in a ſtate of confuſion and perplexity; for, from the circumſtances of the tale he had heard, he plainly per-

perceived, that her ladyſhip's heart was too delicate to receive ſuch incenſe, as he, in the capacity of an admirer, could at preſent pay; becauſe, though he had in ſome meaſure abridged the empire of Emilia in his own breaſt, it was not in his power to reſtrain it ſo effectually, but that it would interfere with any other ſovereign whom his thoughts ſhould adopt: and, unleſs lady —— could ingroſs his whole love, time and attention, he foreſaw, that it would be impoſſible for him to ſupport the paſſion which he might have the good fortune to inſpire. He was, moreover, deterred from declaring his love, by the fate of her former admirers, who ſeemed to have been wound up to a degree of enthuſiaſm, that looked more like the effect of inchantment, than the inſpiration of human attractions; an extaſy of paſſion which he durſt not venture to undergo; therefore reſolved to combat with the impreſſions he had already received, and, if poſſible, cultivate her friendſhip without ſoliciting her affection: but, before he could fix upon this determination, he deſired to know the predicament in which he ſtood in her opinion; and by the intelligence of Crabtree, obtained in the uſual manner, underſtood that her ſentiments of him were very favourable, though without the leaſt tincture of love. He would have been tranſported with joy, had her thoughts of him been of a more tender texture; though his reaſon was better pleaſed with the information he received; in conſequence of which, he muſtered up the ideas of his firſt paſſion, and ſet them in oppoſition to thoſe of this new and dangerous attachment; by which means, he kept the balance *in equilibrio*, and his boſom tolerably quiet.

CHAP. LXXXIX.

Peregrine *amuſes his imagination, by ſlight incurſions upon the territory of vice and folly; reforms a back-ſliding brother, and ſends a celebrated ſharper into exile.*

HIS heart being thus, as it were, ſuſpended between two objects that leſſened the force of each other's attraction, he took this opportunity of enjoying ſome reſpite, and for the preſent detached his ſentiments from both; reſolving to indulge himſelf in the exerciſe of that practical ſatire, which was ſo agreeable and peculiar to his diſpoſition. In this laudable determination he was confirmed by the repeated ſuggeſtions of his friend Cadwallader, who taxed him with letting his talents ruſt in indolence, and ſtimulated his natural vivacity, with a ſucceſſion of freſh diſcoveries in the world of ſcandal.

Thus reinforced, they took the field, and performed various exploits, to the mortification, aſtoniſhment and diſmay of all thoſe coxcombs, whether male or female, fierce or feeble, inſolent or tame, that hang like tatters on the ſkirts of gallantry, and bring the faſhion into diſgrace. As I might treſpaſs upon the patience of the reader, in giving a minute detail of each adventure of this kind which they atchieved, I ſhall content myſelf with relating two only, to which indeed all the reſt bore ſome reſemblance.

Peregrine's intelligencer, who (as we have already obſerved) was a privileged perſon in all parties, happened one morning to breakfaſt with a ſort of a great man, who, with a large ſtock of

of timorous ſuperſtition and exterior piety, had at bottom a ſpice of carnality, which all his religion could not extinguiſh. Among the reſt of his dependants, there was a certain favourite, who by the moſt aſſiduous attention to his humour, in a courſe of artful flattery and ſervile complaiſance, had inſinuated himſelf ſo far into his confidence and eſteem, that he now acted in the capacity of his counſellor and director, both in his ſpiritual and temporal concerns.

This cunning paraſite having diſcovered his patron's infirmity, began to be afraid, that in the inſtigations of the fleſh, he might be tempted to employ ſome other agent for the gratification of his appetite: and foreſeeing that any miniſter of this kind would infallibly prove a dangerous rival to him, in the good graces of his maſter, he reſolved to anticipate the misfortune, and, with his other offices, monopolize the functions of a Mercury, for which his talents were perfectly well adapted. But this was not the whole of his taſk; he knew there were certain qualms and ſcruples of conſcience to be removed, as well as other motives of ſhyneſs and diſtruſt, which he durſt not leave to the operation of his friend's own deſires, leſt he ſhould chooſe ſome other confident; he therefore obſerved the different ſeaſons of his conſtitution, and culled the proper opportunities of expreſſing a relaxation in his ſentiments of chaſtity; which being gratefully received, he proceeded in the work of converſion, already half effected by his patron's own paſſions; and in concluſion, found a willing dame to quench this fire that ſcorched his vitals. He had overnight obtained her conſent, and the particulars of their meeting were adjuſted, in preſence of Cadwal-

lader, who gave his aſſociate to underſtand that, with a view of keeping the rendezvous ſecret and myſterious, as well as of ſaving the lovers that mutual confuſion which the light muſt have produced, the ſcene of their interview was laid in a ſummer-houſe, that ſtood at the end of his garden, to which the lady and her conductor would be admitted in the dark, through a back-door that ſhould be left open for the purpoſe. Peregrine being made acquainted with theſe particulars, together with the hour of aſſignation, ordered Pipes to purchaſe a live calf, and carried it in a ſack, about the twilight, to the back-garden-door, which our hero entered without heſitation, diſpoſing himſelf and his attendants in a dark alcove immediately under the ſummer-houſe, where (without diſengaging the animal from its covering) he beſmeared its front with liquid phoſphorus, and directed Tom to unveil, and preſent it to the company at their approach, while he himſelf abſconded behind a pillar, from whence he could view the entertainment. They had continued a whole hour in this ſituation, when they perceived by ſtar-light, three perſons enter the poſtern, and advance towards the place where they lay; upon which, Pipes began to diſentangle his charge, that he might be ready to play it off at the proper time; but, as he was not very expert in this buſineſs, the calf finding itſelf diſengaged from its confinement, ſprung all of a ſudden out of his hands, and running directly forwards, encountered thoſe that approached, and as it paſſed them, uttered a loud *Baa*.

The gallant, whoſe paſſions were exalted to a pitch of enthuſiaſm, as ſuſceptible of religious horror as of love, ſeeing ſuch an apparition, when he

he was at the point of indulging a criminal appetite, and hearing the dreadful cry, accompanied with the terrible word *damnation*, which Pipes, in his peculiar tone, exclaimed from the alcove, when the animal made its eſcape; he was ſeized with conſternation and remorſe, and falling upon his face, lay in all the agonies of terror, believing himſelf warned by a particular meſſage from above. His truſty ſquire, who was not quite ſo viſionary, recollecting himſelf from the ſurprize he had ſuffered at the firſt appearance of ſuch a glaring phænomenon, which had alſo ſuch an effect upon the lady, that ſhe ran out into the fields, ſcreaming all the way: I ſay, he no ſooner recovered the faculty of reflection, which this accident had for ſome minutes taken away, than he obſerved his patron's proſtration; and gueſſing the condition of his thoughts, reſolved to profit by his ſagacity. He accordingly laid himſelf gently down upon the cold walk, and lay very quietly, till the lover, having in a faultring voice called thrice upon his name, without being favoured with an anſwer, raiſed himſelf up, and coming to the ſpot, ſhook him by the arm; upon which he ſeemed to wake from his trance, and in a moſt penitent tone pronounced a very pious ejaculation, which confirmed the opinion of his principal, who aſked him with fear and trembling, if he had heard the voice and ſeen the light. Being an excellent actor, he replied with all the marks of amazement, that he was ſtruck blind with a guſh of light, far exceeding that of the ſun at noon, and his ears appalled with a voice, like the ſound of many waters, denouncing damnation to thoſe who obey the luſts of the fleſh.

The converted lover, though he was not ſenſible of ſuch extraordinary circumſtances of viſitation, implicitely believed every tittle of his account, imputing the difference of his own perception to the weakneſs of his organs, which were ſooner diſturbed than thoſe of his purveyor. He therefore propoſed, that they ſhould adjourn to the chamber which had been deſtined for the ſcene of his tranſgreſſion, and with ſorrow and contrition aſk pardon of heaven for his intended offence, acknowledging at the ſame time, the ſeaſonable and ſalutary interpoſition of providence. This duty was accordingly performed, after they had ſearched in vain for the nymph, who (the ſquire ſeemed to think) was conveyed by ſome ſupernatural means from the garden; for he ſaid, as he lay intranced upon the ground, he heard a rattling like the chariots of Aminadab, and the ſhrieks of the young woman gradually ſinking in a diſtant cadence, as if ſhe had been tranſported through the air.

As this pair of penitents walked up ſtairs to the ſummer-houſe, the patron, in an extaſy of faith, pronounced, "After this tremendous ſcene, who can be ſo incredulous, ſo dead to all conviction, as to doubt the miracle of the loaves and fiſhes, or the amazing circumſtances that attended the converſion of St. Paul?" While they were employed in the exerciſe of their devotion, our hero and his attendant retired by the back-door, which opened into the fields; and while Pipes went in purſuit of his calf, which had taken ſhelter under the wall, his maſter proceeded forwards to the place from whence he had come, where he had agreed to meet Cadwallader, and communicate the ſucceſs of

of his enterprize, with which he was perfectly well pleaſed. In croſſing the field that lay betwixt him and that part of the town for which he was bound, he chanced to paſs by a heap of wood, upon which he perceived a woman, tolerably well dreſſed, ſitting, and holding a ſmelling-bottle to her noſe. He immediately gueſſed her to be the lady whom he had interrupted in her aſſignation; and thinking it was incumbent upon him to make ſome atonement for the injury he had done, he accoſted her with great politeneſs and reſpect, telling her, he preſumed, from her being in ſuch a ſolitary place, at ſuch an hour, that ſhe had met with ſome misfortune; and that, if ſhe would put herſelf under his protection, he would defend her from any farther inſult.

His conjecture was right; this was the individual inamorata who had fled from the garden, and who was ſo terrified at the viſion, the meaning of which ſhe could not comprehend, that ſhe found herſelf unable to proceed farther homewards, and ſat down on a log of wood, to enjoy a little pauſe of reſt, and endeavour to recollect her diſſipated ſpirits. She had not yet got the better of her apprehenſion, which was rather increaſed by the darkneſs of the night and the lonelineſs of the place; ſo that ſhe, without ſcruple, embraced the offer of a perſon who behaved with ſuch gentle addreſs: and as ſhe was enervated by fear, he carefully ſupported her in walking, with his arm round her waiſt, encouraging her all the way with aſſurances of ſafety, and expreſſing his curioſity to know the adventure, in conſequence of which ſhe had occaſion for aſſiſtance. She ſpoke very little during her paſſage through the field,

field, becauſe, notwithſtanding his profeſſions and appearance, he was ſtill a ſtranger; and therefore ſhe could not be altogether eaſy, while ſhe thought herſelf abſolutely in his power: but, when they entered the town, and mingled with the concourſe of people that paſs and repaſs through all the ſtreets of this metropolis, her diffidence intirely vaniſhed, and her converſation became altogether unreſerved.

The remembrance of what had diſcompoſed her ſo much in the garden, now afforded ſubject for her mirth; and when her conductor ſtill repeated his deſire of information, ſhe could not help laughing heartily, at the circumſtances which his queſtions recalled. Encouraged by this manifeſtation of good humour, he obſerved, that as her ſpirits were exhauſted by the fatigue and diſquiet ſhe had undergone, it would be impoſſible for her to walk much farther, and begg'd ſhe would ſtep with him into the next tavern, where they might ſend for an hackney-coach or chair, in which ſhe would be conveyed to her own lodging. After much intreaty, ſhe conſented to his propoſal; and he had the pleaſure to ſee, that ſhe was a very handſome young woman, about the age of eighteen.

The joy he felt at this diſcovery lightened in his eyes; nor was ſhe able to conceal a certain alacrity and ſatisfaction that appeared in her countenance, when ſhe obtained a diſtinct view of her protector's perſon. In ſhort, ſhe was prevailed upon to drink a glaſs of wine; and Peregrine preſuming upon his knowledge of her adventure, began to make love with great vehemence. At firſt, ſhe pretended to take offence at his preſumption; but, perceiving from certain in-

inſinuations which he artfully dropp'd, that he was better acquainted with her character than ſhe had imagined, her ſhyneſs gradually wore off, and they ſoon came to a ſatisfactory explanation; in the beginning of which, he frankly unravelled the whole myſtery of the apparition: a diſcovery which had almoſt proved fatal to her, from the violence of mirth it produced; and ſhe as candidly diſcloſed her own private hiſtory. She told him, that her lover's honourable agent had formerly lived in the houſe of her mother, who being a poor widow, ſupported her family by letting lodgings; that he had, by the opportunities of familiarity and friendſhip, employed his arts upon her, and actually debauched this girl, when ſhe was no more than fifteen years of age; that upon the remonſtrances of her mother, who detected their correſpondence, by perceiving ſhe was with child, he had quitted the houſe, with an abſolute refuſal to provide for her; ſo that ſhe was obliged to ſue him for the maintenance of the infant, and reduced to the neceſſity of receiving gallants in private; though ſhe had always managed her occupation in ſuch a manner, as to preſerve her character unſuſpected in the neighbourhood: and laſtly, that her firſt ſeducer had lately renewed his correſpondence, by dint of preſents and apologies, and procured her as a virgin for his patron, who had promiſed to ſettle ſome ſmall proviſion upon her for life.

Peregrine comforted her for her diſappointment, by reciting what he had overheard of the converſation that paſſed in the garden, after ſhe made her elopement; from whence he inferred, that her intereſt would ſuffer no prejudice from that

that interruption; becauſe, in all probability, her intended lover's fleſh would ſoon get the better of the ſpirit again, in ſpite of a thouſand apparitions; in which caſe, he would again have recourſe to her compliance; or, ſhould his ſuperſtition prevail, he would look upon himſelf as in duty and conſcience bound, to enable her, by a ſuitable ſettlement, to withſtand ſuch temptations for the future.

She ſeemed to concur with his opinion, and was perfectly ſatisfied with that expectation, while our hero was more and more engaged by her eaſy and agreeable deportment. Her converſation was that of a gay libertine, who had a good ſhare of ſenſe and imagination, which, with a natural vivacity, ſhe employed in accommodating herſelf to the humour of her gallant: but his ears were not diſguſted with the nauſeous ribaldry and vulgar execrations which characteriſe the diſcourſe of thoſe nymphs, whoſe temporary endearments are ſolicited by the diſtinguiſhing youth of this refined age. In a word, this accidental meeting was productive of very agreeable conſequences to both; and an intimacy of intercourſe immediately commenced, the reſult of which was, her promiſing to reſerve her favours for him alone, till farther notice, and to enter into no meaſures with the viſionary, but ſuch as he ſhould know and approve.

Having paſſed the evening with this new acquaintance, and informed himſelf of the particulars neceſſary to be known, for the ſupport of the correſpondence they had eſtabliſhed, he favoured her with ſome marks of his bounty, and repaired to the lodgings of his friend Crabtree, who was ſo much incenſed at his breach of punctuality, that

that he ordered himſelf to be denied; and when the young gentleman forced his entrance into his chamber, *vi & armis*, would not open his mouth; but aſſuming the moſt grim contraction of his countenance, ſat in ſullen ſilence, till the circumſtances of the adventure, which his aſſociate knew how to relate to the greateſt advantage, gradually unbended his features to an involuntary ſmile, which ſoon dilated into an unreſtrained laugh, aſſuring Peregrine of his forgiveneſs and approbation: for though (as I have already obſerved) this Miſanthrope had gained an abſolute aſcendency over the muſcles of his face, and, when under the eye of the world, could laugh inwardly, without betraying the leaſt ſymptom of mirth, this ſelf-denial was not exerted without pains; and therefore he, in private, indemnified himſelf for the trouble he was at, in preſerving that inflexible gravity in public.

Next day in the evening, our adventurer viſited his fair Phillis, and underſtood that ſhe had a meſſage from the new convert, exhorting her to repentance and reformation, and promiſing to ſupport her in her laudable endeavours, as ſoon as ſhe ſhould be diſpoſed to begin the great work. At the ſame time, his truſty meſſenger had talked of his patron's converſion in the moſt ludicrous terms, accounted for the apparition, by affirming, that it was no other than a dog, with a paper-lanthorn hanging to his neck, equipped in that manner by ſome prentices for their diverſion; that he had been thrown over the wall, with a view to frighten the ſervants of the family; and not liking his quarters, no ſooner perceived the garden-door opened, than he naturally ran towards it, in order to make his eſcape. He likewiſe

wiſe frankly owned, that he had, with a view to his own intereſt, encouraged his lord and maſter in his ſuperſtitious fears, and even counſelled him to execute, in the courſe of his penitence, a plan which he had formerly laid, of commencing author, and eſpouſing in print the cauſe of miracles, againſt the children of perverſeneſs and incredulity: and in concluſion, this faithful adviſer had made ſtrong love on his own ſcore, propoſing to maintain a correſpondence with her, for which ſhe would be amply recompenced by the bounty of his patron, whom he undertook to deceive with a feigned account of her repentance.

The wench, having an averſion to the character of this paraſite, whom ſhe had too great reaſon to know, inſtead of embracing his propoſal with chearfulneſs and alacrity, told him with an affected air of ſeverity, that howſoever his heart might be hardened againſt the warnings of heaven, ſhe had the internal comfort to find her own breaſt touched with a due ſenſe of her unworthineſs, and would, by the bleſſing of providence, imitate the ſalutary example of his good friend, to whom ſhe intended to write an account of her inward workings, which ſhe hoped were no other than the motions of the ſpirit.

Mr. Mercury hearing this unexpected declaration, which was delivered with a face of pious reſolution, immediately availed himſelf of that hypocriſy, which he poſſeſſed to ſuch a conſummate degree; and after having proteſted with great earneſtneſs, that what he had ſaid, was uttered with a view to try whether or not ſhe was intirely mortified to all the luſts of the fleſh, he applauded her determination with the moſt lofty encomiums, and admoniſhed her to perſeverance, in

in an enthuſiaſtic harangue; during which, the tears actually guſhed from his eyes, and his looks adopted a ſort of wildneſs and extatic ſtare, as if he had been really tranſported.

Though ſhe ſaw through the diſguiſe, ſhe ſeemed convinced of his ſincerity; as a confirmation of which, he gave her his purſe, and took his leave, aſſuring her that ſhe ſhould never want, ſo long as ſhe could retain grace enough to perſiſt in the happy work ſhe had ſo righteouſly begun. Peregrine approved of her behaviour, and having inſtructed her with regard to her future conduct, returned to his auxiliary and intelligencer, with whom he concerted another ſtratagem, to be practiſed upon a certain ſhe-gameſter of faſhion, and a French adventurer, who, under the title of count, ſupported with invincible effrontery, and a large ſtock of fineſſe, had found means to introduce himſelf among the quality, from many of whom he had extracted large ſums of money at play. Among thoſe whom he laid under contribution, was this lady, who with all the inclination of a rank ſharper, had fallen a ſacrifice to his ſuperior talents, and become his debtor for five hundred pounds, which ſhe could not pay without the aſſiſtance of her huſband, whom ſhe did not think proper to inform of the loſs. She had for ſome days evaded the demands of her creditor, by divers ſpecious pretences, which, however, were ſoon exhauſted; and he grew ſo diſagreeably importunate, as to threaten an application to her lord, if ſhe would not diſcharge the debt immediately.

The lady being a latitudinarian in her principles, and reduced to great perplexity by theſe menaces, could think of no other expedient to

ex-

extricate herſelf, than that of practiſing upon the foreigner's heart, which ſhe accordingly aſſailed with all the arts of coquetry, reinforced by a very agreeable perſon, to which ſhe had been often indebted for ſundry fortunate events. Nevertheleſs, in all probability ſhe would have found the count impregnable, had not he, at this criſis, luckily met with ſuch a flow of ſucceſs, as elevated his fancy, and opened his heart to amorous impreſſions. In this ſtate of exultation did he firſt perceive, or at leaſt acknowledge the attractions of his debtor, to whom he, in a billet, declared his paſſion, and frankly propoſed the alternative, which it was her ſole aim to procure.

After the neceſſary ſcruples of decent reluctance, the affair was compromiſed, in the hearing of Cadwallader, who reported to his aſſociate, that ſhe had given the count an aſſignation at the houſe of a diſcreet matron, who, under the denomination of a milliner, kept commodious apartments for interviews of this kind.

Peregrine, who was not unknown to this prieſteſs of love, no ſooner received this intelligence, than he went and beſpoke one of her chambers, contiguous to that which the foreigner had choſen for his accommodation; and ſome time before the hour of their appointment, took poſſeſſion of it, accompanied by Crabtree, whom he had dreſſed in woman's apparel, becauſe the Miſanthrope would not run the riſque of being obſerved *in propria perſona*.

The lovers, true to their contract, met preciſely at the hour; the lady having diſguiſed herſelf in an ordinary diſhabille, with a capuchin, the hood of which effectually concealed her coun-

countenance; and the door of their apartment being ſhut, the count found himſelf on the brink of enjoying his good fortune, when all of a ſudden, Peregrine, placing himſelf at the door, pronounced aloud, in the very voice and manner of her lord, whom he perſonally knew, "Stand firm upon your poſt, Mr. Conſtable, and take care that none ſhall paſs, while I break open the door, and make ſure of the delinquent; for now I think her ladyſhip is fairly caught."

This exclamation produced an inſtantaneous effect in the chamber: the count, terrified at the proſpect of immediate death or proſecution, ran directly to the window, and throwing up the ſaſh, would have made his exit into the ſtreet, without ceremony; but my lady, who never doubted that her huſband was at the door, had recourſe to that preſence of mind, which never forſook her upon ſuch occaſions; and ſeizing her gallant by the collar, exalted her voice, crying, "Rape! Murder! Rape! Ah villain! do you attempt my virtue? Are theſe the laces you invited me to come and ſee? Ah, you beaſtly monſter! Help, good people, help!"

The noiſe of theſe outcries, (in conſequence of which Pickle immediately retreated to his den) alarmed the whole family. The landlady, whoſe reputation was at ſtake, ran up ſtairs, accompanied by two chairmen, who waited for my lady below; and the door being burſt open by her directions, they found her ladyſhip in a violent agitation, holding faſt by the count, who ſtood without his perriwig, ſhaking from head to foot, in all the agony of horror and diſmay. My lady, finding herſelf delivered from the attempts of this raviſher, ſunk down upon the

couch

couch in a ſwoon; and while the matron of the houſe adminiſtered to her noſtrils, the chairmen ſecured the poor gallant, whoſe faculties were actually ſuppreſſed by the extaſy of his fear.

The lady having a little recollected her ſpirits, and looking around, without perceiving her huſband, concluded that he was ſatisfied of her innocence, by the artifice of her behaviour, and omitted to ſhew himſelf, that ſhe might not be ſhocked at his appearance. On this ſuppoſition, ſhe renewed her clamour againſt the count, whom ſhe reviled with the epithets of perfidious wretch, and abominable ruffian; and expreſſed her doubts about the honeſty of the houſe, to which (ſhe ſaid) he had decoyed her, on pretence of ſhewing ſome laces of a new pattern, that the milliner had received from abroad.

The landlady was no ſtranger to her perſon or character, and therefore had never doubted the truth of the count's information, when he made her privy to the nature of this interview; but her ladyſhip's preſent behaviour, (the true cauſe of which ſhe did not know) intirely altered her opinion; and ſhe now believed, that the count intended to have made her houſe the ſcene of a rape in good earneſt. This ſuggeſtion diveſted her of all regard for her cuſtomer, againſt whom ſhe exclaimed with great virulence, as a perſon who had endeavoured to intail the curſe of infamy upon her houſe; and aſſured the plaintiff, that he had hired the apartment for a young lady, whom he pretended to have privately eſpouſed, without the conſent of her parents, from whoſe inquiries he had reaſons to conceal the place of her abode.

The

The rueful foreigner, baited with their joint invectives, and more than half diſtracted with the terrors of an Engliſh jury, never dream'd of attempting to vindicate himſelf from the imputation he had incurred; becauſe he imagined the whole affair was the reſult of a conſpiracy againſt his life and fortune; but falling upon his knees before his accuſer, in the moſt ſuppliant manner, implored her pardon, which he offered to acknowledge by a preſent of a thouſand pounds. Had theſe terms been ſeaſonably propoſed, matters would ſoon have been brought to an accommodation; but ſhe could not decently enter into a treaty with him, in preſence of ſuch witneſſes; and beſides, ſhe believed herſelf ſtill under the inſpection of her huſband. She therefore rejected his proffer with diſdain, obſerving, that his guilt was of ſuch a nature, as to preclude all hopes of forgiveneſs; and ordered the chairmen to take charge of his perſon, until he ſhould be taken into cuſtody by an officer properly authorized.

Having given theſe directions, at which the poor priſoner wrung his hands in horror and deſpair, ſhe withdrew with the matron into another room, in expectation of being viſited by her huſband; and after having waited ſome time with manifeſt impatience, could not forbear aſking if there were any other lodgers in the houſe: when the landlady replied in the negative, ſhe began to ſift her with a variety of queſtions, in the courſe of which ſhe learn'd, that not a ſoul had entered the houſe after her own arrival; and then conjectured, that the voice ſhe had miſtaken for her huſband's, muſt have been part of a converſation that paſſed in the next houſe, from which ſhe was ſeparated by a thin party-wall.

This diſcovery mortified her in one reſpect, and pleaſed her in another; ſhe was chagrined at the diſagreeable interruption, becauſe it laid her under the neceſſity of expoſing her character to the inquiries of thoſe whom her cries had brought to her aſſiſtance; though ſhe was at the ſame time very well ſatisfied to find that her lord was ignorant of the adventure, and that it was now in her power to be revenged upon the count, for the ſeverity of his behaviour, when he acted in the capacity of her creditor. She therefore reſolved to extort a ſum of money from him, by way of compoſition; and, under pretence of huſhing up an affair, which might (otherwiſe) give ſcandal an opportunity to be free with her reputation, ſignified to her hoſteſs, a deſire of ſeeing matters compromiſed.

The prudent milliner applauded her moderation, by which ſhe foreſaw that her own character would eſcape cenſure; and being favoured with her ladyſhip's confidence, went out immediately, in order to communicate her propoſals to the priſoner; but while theſe deliberations were upon the carpet, he had employed his rhetoric ſo ſucceſsfully upon his guard, that they were prevailed upon to ſet him at liberty, and make their own retreat, at the ſame time. So that her ladyſhip's ſcheme proved abortive, and ſhe was fain to retire to her own houſe, meditating further vengeance upon the fugitive, who did not think proper to ſtand the brunt of her indignation; but decamped that night for his native country, in which he happily ſecured his retreat, fully perſuaded, that his ruin had been planned by a powerful confederacy in England, of which my lady was the chief inſtrument.

Mean

Mean while, our young gentleman and his tutor enjoyed the conſternation and perplexity which they had produced, as an wholeſome chaſtiſement beſtowed upon a profligate virago, loſt to all ſenſe of œconomy and decorum, and a juſt puniſhment inflicted upon an infamous adventurer, who not only pillaged, but alſo diſgraced the company by whom he was careſſed. It was in conſequence of this adventure, that Peregrine conceived a very ludicrous project, the execution of which furniſhed entertainment and admiration to all the faſhionable people in town. The appearance of Cadwallader in a female dreſs, was ſo uncouth and preternatural, that the good milliner, who chanced to be favoured with a glimpſe of him, as he went up ſtairs with his ſuppoſed gallant, was not only aſtoniſhed, but affrighted at the peculiarity of his countenance; and notwithſtanding her well-tried diſcretion, which had never permitted her curioſity to exceed the bounds of complaiſance, ſhe could not forbear calling her ſon Pickle into another room, after her ladyſhip's retreat; and aſking with manifeſt marks of confuſion and diſquiet, if the perſon whom he had brought into her houſe, was really and *bona fide* a woman and a chriſtian; at the ſame time, expreſſing her ſuſpicion, from the diſpoſition of his companion's wrinkles, and the briſtles that appeared upon her chin, that ſhe was no better than a witch or a conjurer, whom he had employed to embroil and expoſe her cuſtomers by the art of ſorcery, for which ſhe prayed God would forgive him. "Certain I am (ſaid ſhe) the count and my lady went into the chamber with the diſpoſition of two lambs, and in the twinkling of an eye, (Lord have

mercy upon us!) there was nothing to be heard but diſcord and deſperation! Ah! Mr. Pickle, Mr. Pickle! it was for no charitable end, that you was ſo anxious to occupy the next room. I thought there was ſomething unnatural in the caſe, when I ſaw you lead up that old beldame with the beard. You have ruined the reputation of my houſe, Mr. Pickle. My good friends the counteſs of Peppermarſh, lady Tickletoe, and Mrs. Riggle, will never enter my doors again. I ſhall be deprived of getting an honeſt livelihood; and all by the cruelty of one that I loved as well as if I had been the mother that bore him. O that ever I was born to ſee this unlucky day!" Theſe words ſhe accompanied with ſundry ſobs, and a few *extempore* tears, the nature of which he perfectly underſtood; and therefore preſcribed a cordial which in a moment ſet her heart at eaſe.

CHAP. XC.

He perſuades Cadwallader *to aſſume the character of a magician, in which he acquires a great ſhare of reputation, by his reſponſes to three females of diſtinction, who ſeverally conſult the reſearches of his art.*

HER ſuſpicion of his aſſociate, while it afforded him ſubject for mirth, ſtruck his imagination with an idea which he could not help indulging; and when he communicated the conceit to Cadwallader, it in a moment acquired his approbation. This notion he imparted in a propoſal, to ſubject the town to their ridicule, by giving reſponſes in the character of a profeſſed con-

conjurer, to be perſonated by the old Miſanthrope, whoſe aſpect was extremely well calculated for the purpoſe. The plan was immediately adjuſted in all its parts; an apartment hired in an houſe accommodated with a public ſtair; ſo that people might have free ingreſs and egreſs, without being expoſed to obſervation; and this tenement being furniſhed with the apparatus of a magician, ſuch as globes, teleſcopes, a magic lanthorn, a ſkeleton, a dried monkey, together with the ſkins of an alligator, otter and ſnake, the conjurer himſelf took poſſeſſion of his caſtle, after having diſtributed printed advertiſements, containing the particulars of his undertaking.

Theſe bills ſoon operated according to the wiſh of the projectors. As the price of the oracle was fixed at half a guinea, the public naturally concluded, that the author was no common fortune-teller; and the very next day, Peregrine found ſome ladies of his quality-acquaintance, infected with the deſire of making an experiment upon the ſkill of this new conjurer, who pretended to be juſt arrived from the Mogul's empire, where he had learned the art from a Brachman philoſopher. Our young gentleman affected to talk of the pretenſions of this ſage with ridicule and contempt, and with ſeeming reluctance, undertook to attend them to his apartment, obſerving, that it would be a very eaſy matter to detect the fellow's ignorance, and no more than common juſtice to chaſtiſe him for his preſumption. Though he could eaſily perceive a great fund of credulity in the company, they affected to eſpouſe his opinion, and under the notion of a frolic, agreed, that one particular lady

ſhould endeavour to baffle his art, by appearing before him in the dreſs of her woman, who ſhould, at the ſame time, perſonate her miſtreſs, and be treated as ſuch by our adventurer, who promiſed to ſquire them to the place. Theſe meaſures being concerted, and the appointment fixed for the next audience-day, Peregrine furniſhed his friend with the neceſſary information; and when the hour of aſſignation arrived, conducted his charge to this oraculous ſeer.

They were admitted by our hero's valet de chambre, whoſe viſage being naturally meagre and ſwarthy, was adorned with artificial whiſkers; ſo that he became the Perſian dreſs which he wore, and ſeemed a very proper maſter of the ceremonies to an oriental Necromancer. Having croſſed his arms upon his breaſt, with an inclination of the head, he ſtalked in ſolemn ſilence before them into the Penetralia of the temple, where they found the conjurer ſitting at a table, provided with pen, ink and paper, divers books and mathematical inſtruments, and a long white wand lying acroſs the whole. He was habited in a black gown and fur-cap, and his countenance, over and above a double proportion of philoſophic gravity which he had aſſumed for the occaſion, was improved by a thick beard white as ſnow, that reached to his middle, and upon each ſhoulder ſat a prodigious large black cat which had been tutored for the purpoſe.

Such a figure, which would have ſtartled Peregrine himſelf, had not he been concerned in the myſtery, could not fail to make an impreſſion upon thoſe whom he accompanied. The fictitious chambermaid, in ſpite of all her natural pertneſs and vivacity, changed colour when ſhe en-

entered the room, and the pretended lady, whoſe intellects were not quite ſo enlightened, began to tremble in every joint, and ejaculate petitions to heaven for her ſafety. Their conductor advancing to the table, preſented his offering, and pointing to the *ſuivante*, told him, that lady deſired to know what would be her deſtiny in point of marriage. The philoſopher, without lifting up his eyes to view the perſon in whoſe behalf he was conſulted, turned his ear to one of the ſable familiars that purred upon his ſhoulder, and taking up the pen, wrote upon a detached ſlip of paper theſe words, which Peregrine, at the deſire of the ladies, repeated aloud, "Her deſtiny will, in a great meaſure, depend upon what happened to her about nine o'clock in the morning, on the third day of laſt December."

This ſentence was no ſooner pronounced, than the counterfeit lady uttered a fearful ſcream, and ran out into the antichamber, exclaiming, "Chriſt have mercy upon us! Sure he is the devil incarnate!" Her miſtreſs, who followed her with great conſternation, inſiſted upon knowing the tranſaction to which the reſponſe alluded; and Mrs. Abigail, after ſome recollection, gave her to underſtand, that ſhe had an admirer, who, on the very hour and day mentioned by the cunning man, had addreſſed himſelf to her in a ſerious propoſal of marriage. This explanation, however, was more ingenious than candid; for the admirer was no other than the identical Mr. Pickle himſelf, who was a meer dragon among the chambermaids, and, in his previous information communicated to his aſſociate, had given an account of this aſſignation, with which he had been favoured by the damſel in queſtion.

Our hero ſeeing his company very much affected with this circumſtance of the wizzard's art, which had almoſt frighted both miſtreſs and maid into hyſteric fits, pretended to laugh them out of their fears, by obſerving that there was nothing extraordinary in this inſtance of his knowledge, which might have been acquired by ſome of thoſe ſecret emiſſaries whom ſuch impoſtors are obliged to employ for intelligence, or imparted by the lover himſelf, who had, perhaps, come to conſult him about the ſucceſs of his amour. Encouraged by this obſervation, or rather prompted by an inſatiable curioſity, which was proof againſt all ſort of apprehenſion, the diſguiſed lady returned to the magician's own apartment, and aſſuming the air of a pert chambermaid, "Mr. Conjurer (ſaid ſhe) now you have ſatisfied my miſtreſs, will you be ſo good as to tell me, if ever I ſhall be married?" The ſage, without the leaſt heſitation, favoured her with an anſwer, in the following words: "You cannot be married before you are a widow; and whether or not that will ever be the caſe, is a queſtion which my art cannot reſolve, becauſe my foreknowledge exceeds not the term of thirty years."

This reply, which at once cut her off from the pleaſing proſpect of ſeeing herſelf independent in the enjoyment of youth and fortune, in a moment clouded her aſpect; all her good humour was overcaſt, and ſhe went away, without further inquiry, muttering, in the rancour of her chagrin, that he was a ſilly impertinent fellow, and a meer quack in his profeſſion. Notwithſtanding the prejudice of this reſentment, her conviction ſoon recurred; and when the report of his anſwers was made to thoſe confederates by whom

whom ſhe had been deputed to make trial of his ſkill, they were univerſally perſuaded that his art was altogether ſupernatural, tho' each affected to treat it with contempt, reſolving, in her own breaſt, to have recourſe to him in private.

In the mean time, the maid, tho' laid under the moſt peremptory injunctions of ſecrecy, was ſo full of the circumſtance which related to her own conduct, that ſhe extolled his preſcience, in whiſpers to all her acquaintance, aſſuring them, that he had told her all the particulars of her life; ſo that his fame was almoſt inſtantaneoſly conveyed, thro' a thouſand different channels, to all parts of the town; and the very next time he aſſumed the chair, his doors were beſieged by curious people of all ſects and denominations.

Being an old practitioner in this art, Cadwallaner knew it would be impoſſible for him to ſupport his reputation in the promiſcuous exerciſe of fortune-telling, becauſe every perſon that ſhould come to conſult him would expect a ſample of his ſkill, relating to things paſt; and it could not be ſuppoſed, that he was acquainted with the private concerns of every individual who might apply to him for that purpoſe: he therefore ordered his miniſter, whom he diſtinguiſhed by the name of Hadgi Rourk, to ſignify to all thoſe who demanded entrance, that his price was half a guinea; and that all ſuch as were not diſpoſed to gratify him with that conſideration would do well to leave the paſſage free for the reſt.

This declaration ſucceeded to his wiſh; for this congregation conſiſted chiefly of footmen, chambermaids, prentices, and the lower claſs of tradeſmen, who could not afford to purchaſe preſcience at ſuch a price; ſo that, after fruitleſs

offers of ſhillings and half crowns, they dropped off one by one, and left the field open for cuſtomers of an higher rank.

The firſt perſon of this ſpecies who appeared was dreſſed like the wife of a ſubſtantial tradeſman; but this diſguiſe could not ſcreen her from the penetration of the conjurer, who at firſt ſight knew her to be one of the ladies of whoſe coming he had been apprized by Peregrine, on the ſuppoſition that their curioſity was rather inflamed than allayed by the intelligence they had received from his firſt client. This lady approached the philoſopher with that intrepidity of countenance ſo conſpicuous in matrons of her dignified ſphere, and in a ſoft voice, aſked with a ſimper, of what complexion her next child would be? The necromancer, who was perfectly well acquainted with her private hiſtory, forthwith delivered his reſponſe in the following queſtion, written in the uſual form, "How long has Pompey the black been diſmiſſed from your ladyſhip's ſervice?"

Endued as ſhe was with a great ſhare of that fortitude which is diſtinguiſhed by the appellation of effrontery, her face exhibited ſome ſigns of ſhame and confuſion at the receit of this oracular interrogation, by which ſhe was convinced of his extraordinary intelligence; and accoſting him in a very ſerious tone, "Doctor (ſaid ſhe) I perceive you are a perſon of great abilities in the art you profeſs; and therefore, without pretending to diſſemble, I will own you have touched the true ſtring of my apprehenſions. I am perſuaded I need not be more particular in my inquiries. Here is a purſe of money; take it, and deliver me from a moſt alarming and uneaſy ſuſpence." So ſaying, ſhe depoſited her offering upon the table,

table, and waited for his anſwer with a face of fearful expectation, while he was employed in writing this ſentence for her peruſal: "Tho' I ſee into the womb of time, the proſpect is not perfectly diſtinct; the ſeeds of future events lie mingled and confuſed: ſo that I am under the neceſſity of aſſiſting my divination in ſome caſes, by analogy and human intelligence; and cannot poſſibly ſatisfy your preſent doubts, unleſs you will condeſcend to make me privy to all thoſe occurrences which you think might have interfered with the cauſe of your apprehenſion."

The lady having read the declaration, affected a ſmall emotion of ſhyneſs and repugnance, and ſeating herſelf upon a ſettee, after having cautiouſly informed herſelf of the privacy of the apartment, gave ſuch a detail of the ſucceſſion of her lovers, as amazed while it entertained the necromancer, as well as his friend Pickle, who from a cloſet in which he had concealed himſelf, overheard every ſyllable of her confeſſion. Cadwallader liſtened to her ſtory with a look of infinite importance and ſagacity, and after a ſhort pauſe told her, that he would not pretend to give a categorical anſwer, until he ſhould have deliberated maturely upon the various circumſtances of the affair; but if ſhe would take the trouble of honouring him with another viſit on his next public day, he hoped he ſhould be able to give her full ſatisfaction. Conſcious of the importance of her doubts, ſhe could not help commending his caution, and took her leave, with a promiſe of returning at the appointed time; then the conjurer being joined by his aſſociate, they gave a looſe to their mirth, which having indulged, they began to concert meaſures for inflicting ſome

diſgraceful puniſhment on the ſhameleſs and inſatiate termagant who had ſo impudently avowed her own proſtitution.

They were interrupted, however, in their conference, by the arrival of a new gueſt, who being announced by Hadgi, our hero retreated to his lurking-place, and Cadwallader reſumed his myſterious appearance. This new client, tho' ſhe hid her face in a maſk, could not conceal herſelf from the knowledge of the conjurer, who by her voice recognized her to be an unmarried lady of his own acquaintance. She had, within a ſmall compaſs of time, made herſelf remarkable for two adventures, which had not at all ſucceeded to her expectation: being very much addicted to play, ſhe had, at a certain route, indulged that paſſion to ſuch exceſs, as not only got the better of her juſtice, but alſo of her circumſpection; ſo that ſhe was unfortunately detected in her endeavours to appropriate to herſelf what was not lawfully her due. This ſmall ſlip was attended with another indiſcretion, which had likewiſe an unlucky effect upon her reputation. She had been favoured with the addreſſes of one of thoſe hopeful heirs who ſwarm and ſwagger about town, under the denomination of Bucks; and in the confidence of his honour conſented to be one of a partie that made an excurſion as far as Windſor, thinking herſelf ſecured from ſcandal by the company of another young lady, who had alſo condeſcended to truſt her perſon to the protection of her admirer. The two gallants, in the courſe of this expedition, were ſaid to uſe the moſt perfidious means to intoxicate the paſſions of their miſtreſſes, by mixing drugs with their wine,

wine, which inflamed their conſtitutions to ſuch a degree, that they fell an eaſy ſacrifice to the appetites of their conductors, who, upon their return to town, were ſo baſe and inhuman as to boaſt among their companions of the exploit they had atchieved. Thus the ſtory was circulated, with a thouſand additional circumſtances to the prejudice of the ſufferers, one of whom had thought proper to withdraw into the country, until the ſcandal raiſed at her expence ſhould ſubſide; while the other, who was not ſo eaſily put out of countenance, reſolved to outface the report, as a treacherous aſperſion, invented by her lover as an excuſe for his own inconſtancy; and actually appeared in public, as uſual, till ſhe found herſelf neglected by the greateſt part of her acquaintance.

In conſequence of this diſgrace, which ſhe knew not whether to impute to the card affair, or to the laſt *faux pas* ſhe had committed, ſhe now came to conſult the conjurer, and ſignified her errand, by aſking whether the cauſe of her preſent diſquiet was of the town or country? Cadwallader at once perceiving her alluſion, anſwered her queſtion in theſe terms. "This honeſt world will forgive a young gameſter for indiſcretion at play, but a favour granted to a blabbing coxcomb is an unpardonable offence." This reponſe ſhe received with equal aſtoniſhment and chagrin; and, fully convinced of the necromancer's omniſcience, implored his advice touching the retrieval of her reputation: upon which he counſelled her to wed with the firſt opportunity; and ſhe ſeemed ſo well pleaſed with his admonition, that ſhe gratified him with a double fee, and dropping a low curt'ſy, retired.

Our undertakers now thought it high time to ſilence the oracle for the day, and Hadgi was accordingly ordered to exclude all comers, while Peregrine and his friend renewed the deliberations, which had been interrupted, and ſettled a plan of operations for the next occaſion: mean while it was reſolved, that Hadgi ſhould not only exerciſe his own talents, but alſo employ inferior agents, in procuring general intelligence for the ſupport of their ſcheme; that the expence of this miniſtry ſhould be defrayed from the profits of their profeſſion; and the remainder be diſtributed to poor families in diſtreſs.

CHAP. XCI.

Peregrine *and his friend* Cadwallader *proceed in the exerciſe of the myſtery of fortune-telling, in the courſe of which they atchieve various adventures.*

THESE preliminaries being adjuſted, our hero forthwith repaired to a card aſſembly, which was frequented by ſome of the moſt notable goſſips in town, and having artfully turned the converſation upon the ſubject of the fortune-teller, whoſe talents he pretended to ridicule, incenſed their itch of knowing ſecrets to ſuch a degree of impatience, that their curioſity became flagrant, and he took it for granted, that all or ſome of them would viſit Albumazar on his very firſt viſiting-day. While Peregrine was thus engaged, his aſſociate made his appearance in another convocation of faſhionable people, where he ſoon had the pleaſure of hearing the conjurer brought upon the carpet by an elderly gentlewoman,

man, remarkable for her inquiſitive diſpoſition, who addreſſing herſelf to Cadwallader, aſked, by the help of the finger-alphabet, if he knew any thing of the magician that made ſuch a noiſe in town? The miſanthrope anſwered as uſual, in a ſurly tone, "By your queſtion you muſt either take me for a pimp or an ideot. What, in the name of nonſenſe, ſhould I know of ſuch a raſcal, unleſs I were to court his acquaintance with a view to feaſt my own ſpleen, in ſeeing him fool the whole nation out of their money? Tho', I ſuppoſe, his chief profits ariſe from his practice, in quality of pander. All fortune-tellers are bawds, and for that reaſon are ſo much followed by people of faſhion. This fellow (I warrant) has got ſundry convenient apartments for the benefit of procreation; for it is not to be ſuppoſed that thoſe who viſit him on the pretence of conſulting his ſupernatural art, can be ſuch fools, ſuch drivelers, as to believe that he can actually prognoſticate future events."

The company, according to his expectation, imputed his remarks to the rancour of his diſpoſition, which could not bear to think that any perſon upon earth was wiſer than himſelf; and his ears were regaled with a thouſand inſtances of the conjurer's wonderful preſcience, for which he was altogether indebted to fiction. Some of theſe ſpecimens being communicated to him, by way of appeal to his opinion, "They are (ſaid he) meer phantoms of ignorance and credulity, ſwelled up in the repetition, like thoſe unſubſtantial bubbles which the boys blow up in ſoapſuds with a tobacco pipe. And this will ever be the caſe in the propagation of all extraordinary intelligence: the imagination naturally magnifies

dant ſeeing him very much irritated, poſitively denied that he had mentioned a brace; one indeed (ſaid he) I own I took notice of, upon the authority of your own phyſician, who gave me an account of it this morning." "By the Lord! (cried the ſufferer in a rage which he could no longer contain) that raſcal has been ſuborned by my rival, to ſlander my character in this manner; but I'll be revenged, if there be either law or equity in England." He had ſcarce pronounced theſe words, when the doctor happened to enter the room; when his exaſperated patient lifting up his cane, "Sirrah (ſaid he) if I live, I'll make that black crow the blackeſt circumſtance of thy whole life and converſation." The phyſician, confounded at this addreſs, aſſured him that he was utterly ignorant of his meaning, and when the other gentleman explained it, abſolutely denied the charge, affirming he had ſaid no more than that he had vomited a quantity of ſomething as black as a crow. The landlord of the houſe acknowledged that he might have been miſtaken; and thus the whole myſtery was explained."

The company ſeemed to reliſh the ſtory of the three black crows, which they conſidered as an impromptu of Cadwallader's own invention; but, granting it to be true, they unanimouſly declared that it could have no weight in invalidating the teſtimony of divers perſons of honour, who had been witneſſes of the magician's ſupernatural ſkill. On the next day of conſultation, the necromancer being in the chair, and his friend behind the curtain, the outward door was ſcarce opened, when a female viſitant flounced in, and diſcovered to the magician the features of one of

thoſe inquiſitive ladies, whoſe curioſity, he knew, his confederate had arouſed, in the manner above deſcribed. She addreſſed herſelf to him with a familiar air, obſerving, that ſhe had heard much of his great knowledge, and was come to be a witneſs of his art, which ſhe deſired him to diſplay, in declaring what he knew to be her ruling paſſion.

Cadwallader, who was no ſtranger to her diſpoſition, aſſumed the pen without heſitation, and furniſhed her with an anſwer, importing, that the love of money predominated, and ſcandal poſſeſſed the next place in her heart. Far from being offended at his freedom, ſhe commended his frankneſs with a ſmile; and, ſatisfied of his uncommon talents, expreſſed a deſire of being better acquainted with his perſon: nay, ſhe began to catechiſe him, upon the private hiſtory of divers great families, in which he happened to be well verſed; and he, in a myſterious manner, dropt ſuch artful hints of his knowledge, that ſhe was amazed at his capacity, and actually aſked if his art was communicable. The conjurer replied in the affirmative; but, at the ſame time, gave her to underſtand, that it was attainable by thoſe only who were pure and undefiled in point of chaſtity and honour; or ſuch as, by a long courſe of penitence, had weaned themſelves from all attachments to the fleſh. She not only diſapproved, but ſeemed to doubt the truth of this aſſertion; telling him, with a look of diſdain, that his art was not worth having, if one could not uſe it for the benefit of one's pleaſure: ſhe had even penetration enough to take notice of an inconſiſtency in what he had advanced; and asked, why he himſelf exerciſed his knowledge

ledge for hire, if he was ſo much detached from all worldly concerns. "Come, come, doctor, added ſhe, you are in the right to be cautious againſt impertinent curioſity; but, perhaps, I may make it worth your while to be communicative."

Theſe overtures were interrupted by a rap at the door, ſignifying the approach of another client; upon which the lady inquired for his private paſſage, thro' which ſhe might retire, without the riſque of being ſeen: and when ſhe underſtood he was deficient in that convenience, ſhe withdrew into an empty room, adjoining to the audience-chamber, in order to conceal herſelf from the obſervation of the new-comer. This was no other than the inamorata, who came by appointment to receive the ſolution of her doubts: and the Miſanthrope, glad of an opportunity to expoſe her to the cenſure of ſuch an indefatigable miniſter of fame as the perſon, who (he knew) would liſten from the next apartment; laid her under the neceſſity of refreſhing his remembrance with a recapitulation of her former confeſſion, which was almoſt finiſhed, when ſhe was alarmed by a noiſe at the door, occaſioned by two gentlemen who attempted to enter by force.

Terrified at this uproar, which diſconcerted the magician himſelf, ſhe ran for ſhelter into the place which was pre-occupied by the other lady, who, hearing this diſturbance, had cloſed the window-ſhutters, that ſhe might have the better chance of remaining unknown. Here they enſconced themſelves, in the utmoſt conſternation, while the necromancer, after ſome recollection, ordered Hadgi to open the door, and admit the rioters, who (he hoped) would be over-awed by the

the authority of his appearance. The janitor had no ſooner obeyed his inſtructions, than in ruſhed a young libertine, who had been for ſome time upon the town, together with his tutor, who was a worn-out debauchee, well known to the magician. They were both in that degree of intoxication neceſſary to prepare ſuch diſpoſitions for what they commonly call frolicks, and the ſober part of mankind feel to be extravagant outrages againſt the laws of their country, and the peace of their fellow-ſubjects. Having ſtaggered up to the table, the ſenior, who undertook to be ſpokeſman, ſaluted Cadwallader with "How do'ſt do, old Capricorn? Thou ſeem'ſt to be a moſt venerable pimp, and, I doubt not, haſt abundance of diſcretion. Here is this young whoremaſter (a true chip of the old venereal block his father) and myſelf, come for a comfortable caſt of thy function. I don't mean that ſtale pretence of conjuring: damn futurity; let us live for the preſent, old Haly. Conjure me up a couple of hale wenches, and, I warrant, we ſhall get into the magic circle in a twinkling. What ſays Galileo? What ſays the reverend Brahe? Here is a purſe, you pimp: hark, how it chinks! This is ſweeter than the muſick of the ſpheres."

Our necromancer, perplexed at this rencounter, made no reply; but taking up his wand, waved it around his head in a very myſterious motion, with a view of intimidating theſe forward viſitants, who, far from being awed by this ſort of evolution, became more and more obſtreperous, and even threatened to pull him by the beard, if he would not immediately comply with their deſire. Had he called his aſſociate, or

even

even Hadgi, to his aid, he knew he could have ſoon calmed their turbulence; but, being unwilling to run the riſque of a diſcovery, or even of a riot, he bethought himſelf of chaſtiſing their inſolence in another manner that would be leſs hazardous, and rather more effectual. In conſequence of this ſuggeſtion, he pointed his wand towards the door of the apartment in which the ladies had taken ſanctuary; and the two rakes, underſtanding the hint, ruſhed in without heſitation.

The females finding their place of retreat taken by aſſault, ran about the room in great conſternation, and were immediately taken priſoners by the aſſailants, who pulling them towards the windows, opened the ſhutters at the ſame inſtant of time, when (ſtrange to tell!) one of the heroes diſcovered, in the prize he had made, the very wife of his boſom; and his companion perceived that he had ſtumbled in the dark upon his own mother. Their mutual aſtoniſhment was unſpeakable at this eclairciſſement, which produced an univerſal ſilence for the ſpace of ſeveral minutes; and during this pauſe the ladies having recollected themſelves, an expoſtulation was begun by the elder of the two, who roundly took her ſon to task for his diſorderly life, which laid her under the diſagreeable neceſſity of watching his motions, and detecting him in ſuch an infamous place.

While the careful mother thus exerciſed her talent for reprehenſion, the hopeful young gentleman, with an hand in each fob, ſtood whiſtling an opera-tune, without ſeeming to pay the moſt profound regard to his parent's reproof: and the other lady, in imitation of ſuch a conſummate

pattern,

pattern, began to open upon her huſband, whom ſhe bitterly reproached with his looſeneſs and intemperance, demanding to know what he had to alledge in alleviation of his preſent miſconduct. The ſurprize occaſioned by ſuch an unexpected meeting had already in a great meaſure deſtroyed the effects of the wine he had ſo plentifully drank, and the firſt uſe he made of his recovered ſobriety, was to revolve within himſelf the motives that could poſſibly induce his wife to give him the rendezvous in this manner. As he had good reaſon to believe ſhe was utterly void of jealouſy, he naturally placed this rencontre to the account of another paſſion; and his chagrin was not at all impaired by the effrontery with which ſhe now preſumed to reprimand him. He liſtened to her, therefore, with a grave, or rather grim aſpect; and to the queſtion with which ſhe concluded her rebuke, anſwered with great compoſure, "All that I have to alledge, madam, is that the bawd has committed a miſtake, in conſequence of which we are both diſappointed: and ſo, ladies, your humble ſervant." So ſaying, he retired with manifeſt confuſion in his looks; and as he paſſed through the audience-chamber, eying the conjurer aſkance, pronounced the epithet of *precious raſcal*, with great emphaſis. Mean while, the junior, like a dutiful child, handed his mamma to her chair; and the other client, after having reviled the necromancer, becauſe he could not foreſee this event, went away in a ſtate of mortification.

The coaſt being clear, Peregrine came forth from his den, and congratulated his friend upon the peaceable iſſue of the adventure which he had overheard: but, that he might not be expoſed

to

to ſuch inconvenience for the future, they reſolved, that a grate ſhould be fixed in the middle of the outward door, through which the conjurer himſelf ſhould reconnoitre all the viſitants, before their admiſſion; ſo that, to thoſe whoſe appearance he ſhould not like, Hadgi ſhould, without opening, give notice, that his maſter was engaged. By this expedient too, they provided againſt thoſe difficulties which Cadwallader muſt have encountered, in giving ſatisfaction to ſtrangers, whom he did not know; for the original intention of the founders was to confine the practice of their art to people of faſhion only, moſt of whom were perſonally known to the counterfeit magician and his coadjutor.

Indeed, theſe aſſociates, Cadwallader in particular, notwithſtanding his boaſted inſight into the characters of life, never imagined that his pretended ſkill would be conſulted by any but the weaker-minded of the female ſex, incited by that ſpirit of curioſity which he knew was implanted in their nature: but, in the courſe of his practice, he found himſelf cultivated in his preternatural capacity, by people of all ſexes, complexions, and degrees of reputation, and had occaſion to obſerve, that when the paſſions are concerned, howſoever cool, cautious and deliberate, the diſpoſition may otherwiſe be, there is nothing ſo idle, frivolous, or abſurd, to which they will not apply for encouragement and gratification. The laſt occurrence, according to the hopes and expectation of the confederates, was whiſpered about by the ladies concerned, in ſuch a manner, that the whole affair was, in a few days, the univerſal topic of diſcourſe, in which it was retailed with numberleſs embelliſhments, invented by the par-

parties themſelves, who had long indulged a pique at each other, and took this opportunity of enjoying their revenge.

Theſe incidents, while they regaled the ſpleen, at the ſame time augmented the renown of the conjurer, who was deſcribed on both ſides as a very extraordinary perſon in his way; and the alteration in his door was no ſooner performed, than he had occaſion to avail himſelf of it, againſt the intruſion of a great many, with whom he would have found it very difficult to ſupport the fame he had acquired.

Among thoſe who appeared at his grate, he perceived a certain clergyman, whom he had long known an humble attendant on the great, and with ſome the reputed miniſter of their pleaſures: This Levite had diſguiſed himſelf in a great coat, boots, and dreſs quite foreign to the habit worn by thoſe of his function; and being admitted, attempted to impoſe himſelf as a country ſquire upon the conjurer, who calling him by his name, deſired him to ſit down. This reception correſponding with the report he had heard, touching our magician's art, the doctor ſaid he would lay aſide all diſſimulation; and after having profeſſed an implicit belief, that his ſupernatural knowledge did not proceed from any communication with evil ſpirits, but was the immediate gift of heaven, he declared the intention of his coming was to inquire into the health of a good friend and brother of his, who poſſeſſed a certain living in the country, which he named; and, as he was old and infirm, to know what ſpace of time was allotted to him in this frail ſtate of mortality, that he might have the melancholy ſatisfaction of

attending him in his laſt moments, and aſſiſting him in his preparations for eternity.

The conjurer, who at once perceived the purport of this queſtion, after a ſolemn pauſe, during which he ſeemed abſorpt in contemplation, delivered this reſponſe to his conſulter, "Tho' I foreſee ſome occurrences, I do not pretend to be omniſcient. I know not to what age that clergyman's life will extend, but ſo far I can penetrate into the womb of time, as to diſcern, that the incumbent will ſurvive his intended ſucceſſor." This dreadful ſentence in a moment baniſhed the blood from the face of the appalled conſulter, who hearing his own doom pronounced, began to tremble in every joint; he lifted up his eyes in the agony of fear, and ſaying, "The will of God be done," withdrew in ſilent deſpondence, his teeth chattering with terror and diſmay.

This client was ſucceeded by an old man about the age of ſeventy-five, who being reſolved to purchaſe a leaſe, deſired to be determined in the term of years by the necromancer's advice, obſerving, that as he had no children of his own body, and had no regard for his heirs at law, the purchaſe would be made with a view to his own convenience only; and therefore, conſidering his age, he himſelf heſitated in the period of the leaſe, between thirty and threeſcore years.

The conjurer, upon due deliberation, adviſed him to double the laſt ſpecified term, becauſe he diſtinguiſhed in his features ſomething portending extreme old age and ſecond childhood, and he ought to provide for that ſtate of incapacity, which otherwiſe would be attended with infinite miſery and affliction. The ſuperannuat-

ed

ed wretch, thunderſtruck with this prediction, held up his hands, and, in the firſt tranſports of his apprehenſion, exclaimed, "Lord have mercy upon me! I have not wherewithal to purchaſe ſuch a long leaſe, and I have long outlived all my friends; what then muſt become of me, ſinner that I am, one hundred and twenty years hence!" Cadwallader (who enjoyed his terror) under pretence of alleviating his concern, told him, that what he had prognoſticated did not deprive him of the means which he and every perſon had in their power, to curtail a life of misfortune; and the old gentleman went away, ſeemingly comforted with the aſſurance, that it would always be in his power to employ an halter for his own deliverance.

Soon after the retreat of this elder, the magician was viſited by one of thoſe worthies known among the Romans by the appellation of *Heredipetes*, who had amaſſed a large fortune by a cloſe attention to the immediate wants and weakneſs of raw unexperienced heirs. This honourable uſurer had ſold an annuity upon the life of a young ſpendthrift, being thereto induced by the affirmation of his phyſician, who had aſſured him his patient's conſtitution was ſo rotten, that he could not live one year to an end: he had, nevertheleſs, made ſhift to weather eighteen months, and now ſeemed more vigorous and healthy than he had ever been known; for he was ſuppoſed to have nouriſhed an hereditary pox from his cradle. Alarmed at this alteration, the ſeller came to conſult Cadwallader not only about the life of the annuitant, but alſo concerning the ſtate of his health at the time of his purchaſing the annuity, purpoſing to ſue the phyſician for

falſe intelligence, ſhould the conjurer declare that the young man was ſound, when the doctor pronounced him diſeaſed. But this was a piece of ſatisfaction he did not obtain from the Miſanthrope, who, in order to puniſh his ſordid diſpoſition, gave him to underſtand, that the phyſician had told him the truth, and nothing but the truth; and that the young gentleman was in a fair way of attaining a comfortable old age."

"That is to ſay (cried the client, in the impatience of his mortification at this anſwer) bating accidents; for, thank God, the annuitant does not lead the moſt regular life: beſides, I am credibly informed he is choleric and raſh; ſo that he may be concerned in a duel: then there are ſuch things as riots in the ſtreet, in which a rake's ſkull may be caſually cracked; he may be overturned in a coach, overſet in the river, thrown from a vicious horſe, overtaken with a cold, endangered by a ſurfeit; but what I place my chief confidence in, is an hearty pox, a diſtemper which hath been fatal to his whole family. Not but that the iſſue of all theſe things is uncertain; and expedients might be found, which would more effectually anſwer the purpoſe. I know they have arts in India, by which a man can ſecure his own intereſt, in the ſalutation of a friendly ſhake by the hand; and I don't doubt that you who have lived in that country, are maſter of the ſecret. To be ſure, if you was inclined to communicate ſuch a noſtrum, there are abundance of people who would purchaſe it, at a very high price."

Cadwallader underſtood this inſinuation, and was tempted to amuſe him in ſuch a manner as would tend to his diſgrace and confuſion; but, conſider-

ſidering that the caſe was of too criminal a nature to be tampered with, he withſtood his deſire of puniſhing this rapacious cormorant any other way than by telling him, he would not impart that ſecret for his whole fortune ten times doubled; ſo that the uſurer retired, very much diſſatisfied with the iſſue of his conſultation.

The next perſon who preſented himſelf at this altar of intelligence, was an author, who recommended himſelf to a gratis advice, by obſerving that a prophet and poet were known by the ſame appellation among the antients; and that, at this day, both the one and the other ſpoke by inſpiration. The conjurer refuſed to own this affinity, which, he ſaid, formerly ſubſiſted, becauſe both ſpecies of the *Vates* were the children of fiction; but as he himſelf did not fall under that predicament, he begged leave to diſown all connexion with the family of the poets; and the poor author would have been diſmiſſed without his errand, tho' he offered to leave an ode as ſecurity for the magician's fee, to be paid from the profits of his firſt third night, had not Cadwallader's curioſity prompted him to know the ſubject of this gentleman's inquiry. He therefore told him, that in conſideration of his genius, he would for once ſatisfy him, without a fee; and deſired him to ſpecify the doubts in which he wiſhed to be reſolved.

The ſon of Parnaſſus, glad of this condeſcenſion, for which he thanked the necromancer, gave him to underſtand, that he had ſome time before preſented a play in manuſcript to a certain great man, at the head of taſte, who had not only read and approved the performance, but alſo undertaken to introduce and ſupport it on

the ſtage; that he (the author) was aſſured by this patron, that the play was already (in conſequence of his recommendation) accepted by one of the managers, who had faithfully promiſed to bring it to light; but that, when he waited on this ſame manager, to know when he intended to put his production into rehearſal, the man declared he had never ſeen or heard of the piece: "Now, Mr. Conjurer (ſaid he) I want to know whether or not my play has been preſented, and if I have any ſort of chance of ſeeing it acted this winter?

Cadwallader, who had, in his younger days, ſported among the theatrical muſes, began to loſe his temper at this queſtion, which recalled the remembrance of his own diſappointments; and diſpatched the author with an abrupt anſwer, importing, that the affairs of the ſtage were altogether without the ſphere of his divination, being intirely regulated by the dæmons of diſſimulation, ignorance, and caprice.

It would be an endleſs taſk to recount every individual reſponſe which our magician delivered, in the courſe of his conjuration. He was conſulted in all caſes of law, phyſic, and trade, over and above the ordinary ſubjects of marriage and fornication; his advice and aſſiſtance were ſollicited by ſharpers who deſired to poſſeſs an infallible method of cheating, unperceived; by fortune-hunters who wanted to make prize of widows and heireſſes; by debauchees who were diſpoſed to lye with other men's wives; by coxcombs who longed for the death of their fathers; by wenches with child, who wiſhed themſelves rid of their burthens; by merchants who had inſured above value, and thirſted after the news of

a wreck; by under-writers who prayed for the gift of preſcience, that they might venture money upon ſuch ſhips only, as ſhould perform the voyage in ſafety; by Jews who wanted to foreſee the fluctuations of ſtock; by uſurers who advance money upon undecided cauſes; by clients who were dubious of the honeſty of their council: in ſhort, all matters of uncertain iſſue were appealed to this tribunal; and, in point of calculation, *De Moivre* was utterly neglected.

CHAP. XCII.

The conjurer and his aſſociate execute a plan of vengeance againſt certain infidels who pretend to deſpiſe their art; and Peregrine atchieves an adventure with a young nobleman.

BY theſe means, the whole variety of character undiſguiſed, paſſed as it were in review before the confederates, who, by divers ingenious contrivances, puniſhed the moſt flagrant offenders with as much ſeverity as the nature of their plan would allow. At length, they projected a ſcheme for chaſtiſing a number of their own acquaintance, who had all along profeſſed the utmoſt contempt for the talents of this conjurer, which they endeavoured to ridicule in all companies, where his ſurpriſing art was the ſubject of diſcourſe; not that they had ſenſe and diſcernment enough to perceive the abſurdity of his pretenſions, but affected a ſingularity of opinion, with a view of inſulting the inferior underſtandings of thoſe who were deceived by ſuch an idle impoſtor.

Peregrine indeed, for obvious reaſons, had always eſpouſed their judgment in this caſe, and joined them in reviling the public character of his friend; but he knew how far the capacities of thoſe virtuoſi extended, and had frequently caught them in the fact of recounting their exploits againſt the conjurer, which were the productions of their own invention only. On theſe conſiderations, his wrath was kindled againſt them, and he accordingly concerted meaſures with his coadjutor, for overwhelming them with confuſion and diſmay.

In the firſt place, a report was ſpread by his emiſſaries, that the magician had undertaken to entertain the view with the appearance of any perſon whom his cuſtomers ſhould deſire to ſee, whether dead, or at the diſtance of a thouſand leagues. This extraordinary propoſal chancing to be the ſubject of converſation, in a place where moſt of thoſe infidels were aſſembled, they talked of it in the uſual ſtile, and ſome of them ſwore, the fellow ought to be pillory'd for his preſumption.

Our hero ſeizing this favourable opportunity, acquieſced in their remarks, and obſerved with great vehemence, that it would be a meritorious action to put the raſcal to the proof, and then toſs him in a blanket for non-performance. They were wonderfully pleaſed with this ſuggeſtion, and forthwith determined to try the experiment; though, as they underſtood the apparition would be produced to one only at a time, they could not immediately agree in the choice of the perſon who ſhould ſtand the firſt brunt of the magician's ſkill. While each of them ſeverally excuſed himſelf from this preference on various pretences,

Pe-

Peregrine readily undertook the poſt, expreſſing great confidence of the conjurer's incapacity to give him the leaſt cauſe of apprehenſion.

This point being ſettled, they detached one of their number to Crabtree, in order to beſpeak and adjuſt the hours and terms of the operation, which he inſiſted upon performing at his own apartment, where every thing was prepared for the occaſion. At the appointed time, they went thither in a body, to the number of ſeven, in full expectation of detecting the impoſtor; and were received with ſuch gloomy formality, as ſeemed to have an effect upon the countenances of ſome among them; though they were encouraged by the vivacity of Pickle, who affected a double ſhare of petulance, for the more effectual accompliſhment of his purpoſe.

Cadwallader made no reply to the interrogations they uttered, in the levity of their inſolence, at their firſt entrance, but ordered Hadgi to conduct them through the next room, that they might ſee there was no previous apparatus to affright their deputy with objects foreign to his undertaking. They found nothing but a couple of wax-tapers burning on a table that ſtood with a chair by it, in the middle of the apartment, and returned to the audience-chamber, leaving Peregrine by himſelf, to encounter the phantom of that perſon, whom they ſhould (without his knowledge) deſire the magician to conjure up to his view.

All the doors being ſhut, and the company ſeated, a profound ſilence enſued, together with a face of dreadful expectation, encouraged by the blue flame of the candles, which were tipt with ſulphur for that purpoſe, and heightened by

the diſmal ſound of a large bell, which Hadgi tolled in the anti-chamber. Cadwallader having thus practiſed upon their ignorance and fear, deſired them to name the perſon to be produced; and after ſome whiſpers among themſelves, one of them took the pen, and writing the name of commodore Trunnion upon a ſlip of paper, put it into the hands of the magician, who roſe from his ſeat, and opening the door of his cloſet, diſplayed to their view a ſcull, with thigh-bones croſſed upon a table covered with black cloth.

This melancholy ſpectacle made a remarkable impreſſion upon the imaginations of the company, already prepoſſeſſed by the previous ceremony; and they began to ſurvey one another with looks of conſternation, while Cadwallader ſhutting himſelf in the cloſet, that was contiguous to the chamber in which his friend Peregrine was ſtationed, thruſt the label with his uncle's name through a ſmall chink in the partition, according to agreement, muttering all the time a ſort of gibberiſh, that increaſed the pannic of his audience; then returning to his chair, the knell was knolled again, and Pickle called aloud, "Damn your mummery, why don't you diſpatch?"

This was a ſignal to Crabtree, who thus certified of his having received the paper, ſtood up and waved his wand in the figure of an S. The motion being thrice performed, their ears were all of a ſudden invaded by a terrible noiſe in the next room, accompanied with the voice of Peregrine, who exclaimed in a tone of horror and amazement, "Guard me, heaven! my uncle Trunnion!" This ejaculation had ſuch an effect upon the hearers, that two of them ſwooned with

fear,

fear, a third fell upon his knees, and prayed aloud, while the other three, in a tranſport of diſmay and diſtraction, burſt open the door, and ruſhed into the haunted chamber, where they found the table and chair overturned, and Peregrine extended (in all appearance) without ſenſe or motion, upon the floor.

They immediately began to chafe his temples, and the firſt ſymptom of his recovery, which they perceived, was an hollow groan; after which, he pronounced theſe words: "Merciful powers! if I live, I ſaw the commodore with his black patch, in the very cloaths he wore at my ſiſter's wedding." This declaration compleated their aſtoniſhment and terror; they obſerved a wildneſs in his looks, which he ſeemed to bend on ſomething concealed from their view; and were infected by his appearance to ſuch a pitch of ſuperſtition, that it would have been an eaſy matter to perſuade them, that the chair and table were apparitions of their forefathers. However, they conducted Peregrine into the council chamber, where the conjurer and Hadgi were employed in miniſtring to thoſe who had fainted: and the patients having retrieved the uſe of their faculties, Cadwallader aſſuming a double portion of ſeverity in his aſpect, aſked if they were not aſhamed of their former incredulity; declaring, that he was ready to give them more convincing proofs of his art upon the ſpot, and would immediately recal three generations of their progenitors from the dead, if they were diſpoſed to reliſh ſuch company. Then turning to one of them, whoſe great grandfather had been hanged, "Are you (ſaid he) ambitious of ſeeing the firſt remarkable perſonage of your family? Say the word; and he ſhall appear."

This youth, who had been the moſt inſolent and obſtreperous of the whole ſociety, and was now depreſſed with the ſame proportion of fear, alarmed at the propoſal, aſſured the magician, he had no curioſity of that ſort remaining; and that, what he had already ſeen, would (he hoped) have a good effect upon his future life and converſation. Every one of theſe heroes made an acknowledgment and profeſſion of the ſame kind, ſome of which were attended with tears; and Hadgi having provided chairs for the whole company, they departed exceedingly creſt-fallen; and two of the number actually ſickened with the agitation they had undergone, while our hero and his aſſociate made themſelves merry with the ſucceſs of their enterprize.

But this ſcheme of fortune-telling did not engroſs his whole attention; he ſtill continued to maintain his appearance in the beau monde; and as his expence far exceeded his income, ſtrove to contract intimacies with people of intereſt and power: he ſhewed himſelf regularly at court, paid his reſpects to them in all places of public diverſion, and frequently entered into their parties, either of pleaſure or cards. In the courſe of this cultivation, he happened one evening, at a certain chocolate-houſe, to overlook a match at piquet, in which he perceived a couple of ſharpers making prey of a young nobleman, who had neither temper nor ſkill ſufficient to cope with ſuch antagoniſts.

Our hero being a profeſſed enemy to all knights of induſtry, could not bear to ſee them cheat in publick with ſuch inſolent audacity; and therefore, under pretence of communicating ſome buſineſs of importance, he begg'd the favour of

ſpeak

ſpeaking to the young gentleman in another corner of the room, and in a friendly manner cautioned him againſt the arts of his opponents. This hot-headed repreſentative, far from thinking or owning himſelf obliged to Pickle for his good counſel, looked upon the advice as an inſult upon his underſtanding; and replied with an air of ferocious diſpleaſure, that he knew how to take care of his own concerns, and would not ſuffer either him or them to bubble him out of one ſhilling.

Peregrine, offended at the aſſociation, as well as at the ingratitude and folly of this conceited coxcomb, expreſſed his reſentment, by telling him, that he expected at leaſt an acknowledgement for his candid intention; but he found his intellects too much warped by his vanity, to perceive his own want of capacity and experience. Inflamed by this reproof, the young nobleman challenged him to play for five hundred pounds, with many opprobrious, or at leaſt contemptuous terms of defiance, which provoked our hero to accept the propoſal; and after the other had diſengaged himſelf from the old rooks, who were extremely mortified at the interruption, the two young champions ſat down, and fortune acting with uncommon impartiality, Pickle, by the ſuperiority of his talents, in two hours won to the amount of as many thouſand pounds, for which he was obliged to take his antagoniſt's note, the ſharpers having previouſly ſecured his ready money.

Frantic with his loſs, the raſh young man would have continued the game, and doubled ſtakes every time; ſo that Peregrine might have increaſed his acquiſition to ten times the ſum he had gained; but he thought he had already ſufficiently

ciently chaſtiſed the preſumption of the challenger, and was unwilling to impower fortune to raviſh from him the fruits of his ſucceſs: he therefore declined my lord's propoſal, unleſs he would play for ready money; and his lordſhip having in vain tried his credit among the company, our adventurer withdrew, leaving him in an extaſy of rage and diſappointment.

As the inſolence of his behaviour had increaſed with his ill luck, and he had given vent to divers expreſſions, which Peregrine took amiſs, our young gentleman reſolved to augment his puniſhment, by teazing him with demands which could not, he knew, be immediately ſatisfied; and next day, ſent Pipes to his father's houſe with the note, which was drawn payable upon demand. The debtor, who had gone to bed half diſtracted with his misfortune, finding himſelf waked with ſuch a diſagreeable dun, loſt all patience, curſed Pickle, threatened his meſſenger, blaſphemed with horrible execrations, and made ſuch a noiſe, as reached the ears of his father, who ordering his ſon to be called into his preſence, examined him about the cauſe of that uproar, which had diſturbed the whole family. The young gentleman, after having eſſayed to amuſe him with ſundry equivocations, which ſerved only to increaſe his ſuſpicion, and deſire of knowing the truth, acknowledged that he had loſt ſome money overnight at cards, to a gameſter, who had been ſo impertinent as to ſend a meſſage, demanding it that morning, though he had told the fellow, it would not ſuit him to pay it immediately. The father, who was a man of honour, reproached him with great ſeverity for his profligate behaviour in general, and this ſcandalous

debt

debt in particular, which he believed to be ſome trifle, and giving him a bank note for five hundred pounds, commanded him to go and diſcharge it, without loſs of time. This well-principled heir took the money, but inſtead of waiting upon his creditor, he forthwith repaired to the gaming-houſe, in hopes of retrieving his loſs; and before he roſe from the table, ſaw his note mortgaged for ſeven eighths of its value.

Mean while, Pickle, incenſed at the treatment which his ſervant had received, and informed of his lordſhip's ſecond loſs, which aggravated his reſentment, determined to preſerve no medium; and taking out a writ that ſame day, put it immediately in execution upon the body of his debtor, juſt as he ſtepp'd into his chair, at the door of White's Chocolate-houſe. The priſoner being naturally fierce and haughty, attempted to draw upon the bailiffs, who diſarmed him in a twinkling; and this effort ſerved only to heighten his diſgrace, which was witneſſed by a thouſand people, moſt of whom laughed very heartily, at the adventure of a lord's being arreſted.

Such a public tranſaction could not long eſcape the knowledge of his father, who (that very day) had the ſatisfaction to hear that his ſon was in a ſpunging-houſe. In conſequence of this information, he ſent his ſteward to learn the particulars of the arreſt, and was equally offended, ſurprized, and concerned, when he underſtood the nature of the debt, which he imagined his ſon had already diſcharged. Unwilling to pay ſuch a conſiderable ſum for a ſpendthrift, whom he had but too much indulged, and who in leſs than one week might involve himſelf in ſuch another difficulty, the old gentleman wrote a letter to Peregrine,

regrine, repreſenting what a hardſhip it would be upon him to forfeit ſuch ſums by the indiſcretion of a ſon, whoſe engagements he was not bound to fulfil, and deſiring ſome mitigation in his demand, as it was not a debt contracted for value received, but incurred without ſubjecting him to the leaſt damage or inconvenience.

Our adventurer no ſooner received this letter, than he went in perſon to wait upon the author, to whom he, in a candid manner, related the particular circumſtances of the match, together with the ingratitude and audacity of his ſon, which he owned had ſtimulated him to ſuch meaſures as he, otherwiſe, would have ſcorned to take. The nobleman acknowledged, that the revenge was hardly adequate to the provocation, and condemned the conduct of his ſon with ſuch juſtice and integrity, as diſarmed Peregrine of his reſentment, and diſpoſed him to give an undoubted proof of his own diſintereſtedneſs, which he immediately exhibited, by producing the note, and tearing it to pieces, after having aſſured his lordſhip, that the writ ſhould be withdrawn, and the priſoner diſcharged before night.

The earl, who perfectly well underſtood the value of money, and was no ſtranger to the characters of mankind, ſtood amazed at this ſacrifice which Pickle proteſted was offered by his eſteem for his lordſhip; and after having complimented him upon his generoſity, in a very uncommon ſtrain of encomium, begg'd the favour of his acquaintance, and inſiſted upon his dining with him next day. The youth, proud of having met with ſuch an opportunity to diſtinguiſh himſelf, in leſs than an hour performed every article of his promiſe; and in the morning was viſited by the

debtor,

debtor, who came, by the expreſs order of his father, to thank him for the obligation under which he was laid, and aſk pardon for the offence he had given.

This condeſcenſion was very glorious for our hero, who graciouſly received his ſubmiſſion, and accompanied him to dinner, where he was careſſed by the old earl with marks of particular affection and eſteem. Nor was his gratitude confined to exterior civility; he offered him the uſe of his intereſt at court, which was very powerful, and repeated his deſire of ſerving him ſo preſſingly, that Peregrine thought he could not diſpenſe with the opportunity of aſſiſting his abſent friend Godfrey, in whoſe behalf he begg'd the influence of his lordſhip.

The earl, pleaſed with this requeſt, which was another proof of the young gentleman's benevolence, ſaid, he would not fail to pay the utmoſt regard to his recommendation; and in ſix weeks a captain's commiſſion was actually ſigned for the brother of Emilia, who was very agreeably ſurprized at the intimation he received from the war-office, though he was utterly ignorant of the canal through which he obtained that promotion.

CHAP. XCIII.

Peregrine *is celebrated as a wit and patron, and proceeds to entertain himſelf at the expence of whom it did concern.*

IN the mean time, Peregrine flouriſhed in the gay ſcenes of life, and (as I have already obſerved) had divers opportunities of profiting in the way of marriage, had not his ambition been

a little too inordinate, and his heart ſtill biaſſed by a paſſion, which all the levity of youth could not balance, nor all the pride of vanity overcome. Nor was our hero unmarked in the world of letters and taſte: he had ſignalized himſelf in ſeveral poetical productions, by which he had acquired a good ſhare of reputation; not that the pieces were ſuch as ought to have done much honour to his genius; but any tolerable performance from a perſon of his figure and ſuppoſed fortune, will always be conſidered, by the bulk of readers, as an inſtance of aſtoniſhing capacity; though the very ſame production, uſhered into the world with the name of an author in leſs affluent circumſtances, would be juſtly diſregarded and deſpiſed; ſo much is the opinion of moſt people influenced and over-awed by ridiculous conſiderations.

Be this as it will, our young gentleman was no ſooner diſtinguiſhed as an author, than he was marked out as a patron, by all the ſtarving retainers to poetry: he was ſolemnized in odes, celebrated in epigrams, and fed with the milk of ſoft dedication. His vanity even reliſhed this incenſe; and though his reaſon could not help deſpiſing thoſe that offered it, not one of them was ſent away, unowned by his munificence. He began to think himſelf, in good earneſt, that ſuperior genius which their flattery had deſcribed; he cultivated acquaintance with the wits of faſhion, and even compoſed in ſecret a number of *bons mots*, which he uttered in company as the impromptu's of his imagination. In this practice indeed, he imitated ſome of the moſt renowned geniuſes of the age, who (if the truth were known) have laboured in ſecret, with the ſweat of their brows, for many a re-

repartee which they have vended as the immediate production of fancy and expreſſion. He was ſo ſucceſsful in this exerciſe of his talents, that his fame actually came in competition with that of a great man, who had long ſat at the helm of wit; and in a dialogue that once happened between them, on the ſubject of a cork-ſcrew, wherein the altercation was diſcharged (according to Bayes) ſlap for ſlap, daſh for daſh, our hero was judged to have the better of his lordſhip, by ſome of the minor ſatellites, that commonly ſurround and reflect the rays of ſuch mighty luminaries.

In a word, he dipped himſelf ſo far in theſe literary amuſements, that he took the management of the pit into his direction, putting himſelf at the head of thoſe critics who call themſelves the town; and in that capacity chaſtiſed ſeveral players, who had been rendered inſolent and refractory by unmerited ſucceſs. As for the new productions of the ſtage, though generally unſpirited and inſipid, they always enjoyed the benefit of his influence and protection; becauſe he never diſliked the performance ſo much as he ſympathized with the poor author, who ſtood behind the ſcenes in the moſt dreadful ſuſpence, trembling, as it were, on the very brink of damnation: yet, though he extended his generoſity and compaſſion to the humble and needy, he never let ſlip one opportunity of mortifying villainy and arrogance. Had the executive power of the legiſlature been veſted in him, he would have doubtleſs deviſed ſtrange ſpecies of puniſhment for all offenders againſt humanity and decorum; but, reſtricted as he was, he employed his invention in ſubjecting them to the ridicule and contempt of their fellow-ſubjects.

It

It was with that view he ſet on foot the ſcheme of conjuration, which was ſtill happily carried on, and made uſe of the intelligence of his friend Cadwallader; though he ſometimes converted this advantage to the purpoſes of gallantry, being (as the reader may have perceived) of a very amorous complexion. He not only acted the reformer, or rather the caſtigator, in the faſhionable world, but alſo exerciſed his talents among the inferior claſs of people, who chanced to incur his diſpleaſure.

Being one day inſulted by a couple of chairmen, who demanded more than their fare, he took particular notice of their number; and next day, Pipes, being dreſſed in one of his old ſuits, went by his direction to a coffee-houſe near their ſtand, after he had loaded himſelf with an additional weight, amounting to an hundred pounds at leaſt; and calling the ſame individual partners who had affronted his maſter, he took poſſeſſion of their chair, and ordered them to carry him to a place at the diſtance of two long miles. The burthen was ſo extraordinary, that when they attempted to take him up, they imagined the vehicle was detained by ſome crack or crevice of the pavement, and one of them actually went to diſengage it; but finding it clear, he began a ſong of imprecations upon his fare, who he ſwore had got a backſide of block-tin; but, being obliged to accompliſh his undertaking, he bent his ſhoulders once more to the load, bidding his comrade lift fair and be damn'd. The taſk was not performed in ſilence; while they ſtaggered along, he curſed in a ſtrain peculiar to himſelf, and in vain endeavoured to provoke the patient Pipes with opprobrious language, hoping that he would either diſmiſs them from his ſervice, or be ſo incenſed at his

his abuſe, as to proceed to manual chaſtiſement; in which caſe, the fellow would have an opportunity of gratifying his choler upon the author of his preſent grievance. Finding, however, that the gentleman bore his reproaches with the moſt philoſophic indifference, he loſt all patience; and being reſtrained, by the fear of the law, from an aſſault upon his fare, he turned the ſtream of his indignation upon his own partner, who, he alledged, did not bear his ſhare of the burthen. This imputation created a diſpute, which was maintained on both ſides with ſuch virulence of obloquy, as produced a quarrel, and mutual defiance to ſingle combat, on the ſpot.

The chair was accordingly ſet down, without ceremony, the antagoniſts ſtripped themſelves in a moment; and a fierce battle enſuing, Peregrine, who followed at a diſtance, enjoyed the pleaſure of ſeeing them both beaten almoſt to jelly, before the conteſt was determined. As for Pipes, he ſat ſtill, and viewed the engagement with great compoſure; and perceiving his carriers diſabled by their mutual proweſs and perſeverance, opened the chair, and very deliberately walked home to his maſter's lodging, where he diſincumbered himſelf of his load.

A few days after the atchievement of this exploit, one of our hero's friends, who lodged at the houſe of an old peeviſh puritanical widow, that kept an hoſier's ſhop, was obliged to quit his apartment at a minute's warning, becauſe he had ſcandalized the houſe, by treating a female couſin at ſupper over-night. On this occaſion, a great deal of ſharp repartee had paſſed between him and his landlady, who not only ſubjected him to infinite inconvenience, from ſuch a precipitate re-

removal, but had likewiſe given her tongue ſuch diſagreeable liberties, at his expence, that he vowed revenge, and now ſollicited the advice and aſſiſtance of his friend. Pickle having inquired into the character of the delinquent, who was hated by her neighbours, for her inſolent and fretful diſpoſition, undertook the cauſe of his companion, to whom he dictated the following advertiſement, which was immediately inſerted in one of the news-papers: "Any perſon poſſeſſed of a male black cat, with white feet, and a buſhy tail, not exceeding the age of two or three years, will find a purchaſer, by carrying it to the ſign of the kid near St. James's."

The projector and his aſſociate having obtained the promiſe of the publiſher, that this intimation ſhould appear next day, went early in the morning to a public houſe, and occupying a room, the windows of which fronted the hoſier's door, ſat with joyful expectation to ſee the effect of their ſcheme, which ſoon yielded them all the ſatisfaction they could deſire. The ſhop was no ſooner opened, than it was ſurrounded by a great number of the Cannaille, who having heard the advertiſement read in ale-houſes, came (each with a cat under his arm) in hopes of making an advantageous bargain; for though many of them were too inconſiderable to produce ſuch an animal of their own property, they had made free with the firſt cats they could pick up, and every one repaired with all poſſible diſpatch to the appointed place, with a view of foreſtalling the market; ſo that, in diſputing the precedence, the whole crew went to loggerheads about the door, to the utter aſtoniſhment of the ſhopkeeper, who could not conceive the meaning of ſuch a congregation.

Nevertheleſs, ſhe began to harangue them in her uſual ſtile, which was not the mildeſt ſort of expoſtulation; and one of the multitude, who found means to detach himſelf from the general uproar and confuſion, told her, he had brought a cat, which, he ſuppoſed, would anſwer the marks of her advertiſement. "Here, (ſaid he, preſenting the creature) look at him, miſtreſs; I'll be damn'd if you ever ſaw a finer boar in your life. Do but mind his tuſks and his tail; his tail is for all the world like a ſquirrel's, and yet he's no more than a kitten; I'm the ſon of a bitch, if he's a day more than ſix months old." This addreſs, while it compleated her amazement, kindled her rage to ſuch a degree, that ſhe ſpit in his face, calling him a cat, and a rat, and a raſcal; and ſhutting the hatch, threatened the whole aſſembly with Bridewell and impriſonment, if they would not immediately diſperſe. Her declamation was ſo ſhrill, as to command the attention of the whole audience, who finding their hopes fruſtrated, and hearing themſelves ſo bitterly reviled, put an end to their own jars, and held a momentary conference; in conſequence of which, one of them was deputed to aſk, whether or not ſhe had advertiſed for a black cat. This queſtion being anſwered in the negative, with a ſtring of reproachful epithets, the interrogator approaching the door, "Why, ye bitch of Babel! (ſaid he) if you won't give money for my cat, you ſhall have him for love." With theſe words he threw it into the ſhop, and retired; while his brethren, in obedience to this ſignal, lifted up their hands as one man, and like ſoldiers at the word of command, diſcharged about forty cats at the ſame inſtant of time, upon the confounded hoſier,

hoſier, who finding herſelf overwhelmed by ſuch a number of animals, which ſhe looked upon as ſo many fiends ſent to torment her, ran aghaſt into the ſtreet with diſmal outcries, imploring the aſſiſtance of her neighbours, who (as well as our confederates) enjoyed her diſtreſs; and after having indulged their animoſity, contributed their aid, in ridding her of ſuch a dangerous annoyance.

The next miſchievous plan that entered our hero's imagination, was ſuggeſted by two advertiſements publiſhed in the ſame paper, by perſons who wanted to borrow certain ſums of money, for which they promiſed to give undeniable ſecurity. Peregrine, from the ſtile and manner of both, concluded they were written by attornies, a ſpecies of people for whom he entertained his uncle's averſion: and in order to amuſe himſelf, and ſome of his friends, with their diſappointment, he wrote a letter ſigned A. B. to each advertiſer, according to the addreſs ſpecified in the news-paper, importing, that if he would come with his writings, to a certain coffee-houſe near the Temple, preciſely at ſix o'clock in the evening, he would find a perſon ſitting in the right-hand box, next to the window, who would be glad to treat with him about the ſubject of his advertiſement, and, ſhould his ſecurity be liked, would accommodate him with the ſum which he wanted to raiſe. Before the hour of this double appointment, Pickle with his friend Cadwallader, and a few more gentlemen, to whom he had thought proper to communicate the plan, went to the coffee-houſe, and ſeated themſelves near the place that was deſtined for their meeting.

The hope of getting money had ſuch an evident effect upon their punctuality, that one of them ar-

arrived a conſiderable time before the hour; and having reconnoitred the room, took his ſtation according to the direction he had received, fixing his eye upon a clock that ſtood before him, and aſking of the bar-keeper if it was not too ſlow. He had not remained in this poſture many minutes, when he was joined by a ſtrange figure, that waddled into the room, with a bundle of papers in his boſom, and the ſweat running over his noſe. Seeing a man in the box to which he had been directed, he took it for granted he was the lender; and as ſoon as he could recover his breath, which was almoſt exhauſted by the diſpatch he had made, "Sir, (ſaid he) I preſume you are the gentleman I was to meet, about that loan."———Here he was interrupted by the other, who eagerly replied, "A. B. Sir, I ſuppoſe." "The ſame, (cried the laſt comer) I was afraid I ſhould be too late; for I was detained beyond my expectation, by a nobleman in the other end of the town, that wants to mortgage a ſmall trifle of his eſtate, about a thouſand a year; and my watch happens to be in the hands of the maker, having met with an accident a few nights ago, which ſet it aſleep. But howſomever, there's no time loſt, and I hope this affair will be tranſacted to the ſatisfaction of us both. For my own part, I love to do good offices myſelf, and therefore I expect nothing but what is fair and honeſt of other people."

His new friend was exceedingly comforted by this declaration, which he conſidered as a happy omen of his ſucceſs; and the hope of fingering the caſh operated viſibly in his countenance, while he expreſſed his ſatisfaction at meeting with a perſon of ſuch candour and humanity. "The

pleaſure (ſaid he) of dealing with an eaſy conſcientious man, is, in my opinion, ſuperior to that of touching all the money upon earth; for what joy can be compared with what a generous mind feels, in befriending its fellow-creatures? I was never ſo happy in my life, as at one time, in lending five hundred pounds to a worthy gentleman in diſtreſs, without inſiſting upon rigid ſecurity. Sir, one may eaſily diſtinguiſh an upright man by his countenance; for example now, I think I could take your word for ten thouſand pounds." The other with great joy proteſted, that he was right in his conjecture, and returned the compliment a thouſand fold: by which means, the expectation of both was wound up to a very intereſting pitch; and both, at the ſame inſtant, began to produce their papers, in the untying of which, their hands ſhook with tranſports of eagerneſs and impatience; while their eyes were ſo intent upon their work, that they did not perceive the occupation of each other.

At length, one of them, having got the ſtart of the other, and unrolled ſeveral ſkins of muſty parchment, directed his view to the employment of his friend; and ſeeing him fumbling at his bundle, aſked if that was a blank bond and conveyance, which he had brought along with him. The other, without liſting up his eyes, or deſiſting from his endeavours to looſe the knot, which by this time he had applied to his teeth, anſwered this queſtion in the negative, obſerving, that the papers in his hand were the ſecurity which he propoſed to give for the money.

This reply converted the looks of the inquirer into a ſtare of infinite ſtolidity, accompanied with the word, *Anan!* which he pronounced in a tone

of

of fear and aſtoniſhment. The other, alarmed at this note, caſt his eyes towards the ſuppoſed lender, and was in a moment infected by his aſpect. All the exultation of hope that ſparkled in their eyes, was now ſucceeded by diſappointment and diſmay; and while they gazed ruefully at each other, their features were gradually elongated, like the tranſient curls of a Middle-row periwig.

This emphatic ſilence was, however, broke by the laſt comer, who, in a faultering accent, deſired the other to recollect the contents of his letter. "Of your letter!" cried the firſt, putting into his hand the advertiſement he had received from Pickle; which he had no ſooner peruſed, than he produced his own, for the ſatisfaction of the other party: ſo that another gloomy pauſe enſued, at the end of which, each uttered a profound ſigh, or rather groan, and riſing up, ſneak'd off, without farther communication; he who ſeemed to be the moſt afflicted of the two, taking his departure, with an exclamation of "Humbugged, egad!"

Such were the amuſements of our hero, tho' they did not engroſs his whole time, ſome part of which was dedicated to nocturnal riots and revels, among a ſet of young noblemen, who had denounced war againſt temperance, œconomy, and common ſenſe, and were indeed the devoted ſons of tumult, waſte, and prodigality. Not that Peregrine reliſhed thoſe ſcenes, which were a ſucceſſion of abſurd extravagance, devoid of all true ſpirit, taſte, or enjoyment: but his vanity prompted him to mingle with thoſe who were intitled the choice ſpirits of the age; and his diſpoſition was ſo pliable, as to adapt itſelf eaſily to

the meaſures of his company, where he had not influence enough to act in the capacity of director. Their rendezvous was at a certain tavern, which might be properly ſtiled the temple of exceſs, where they left the choice of their fare to the diſcretion of the landlord, that they might ſave themſelves the pains of exerciſing their own reaſon; and, in order to avoid the trouble of adjuſting the bill, ordered the waiter to declare how much every individual muſt pay, without ſpecifying the articles of the charge; and this proportion generally amounted to two guineas *per* head for each dinner and ſupper, and frequently exceeded that ſum; of which the landlord durſt not abate, without running the riſque of having his noſe ſlit for his moderation.

But this was a puny expence, compared with that which they often incurred, by the damage done to the furniture and ſervants, in the madneſs of their intoxication, as well as the loſs they ſuſtained at hazard, an amuſement to which all of them had recourſe, in the progreſs of their debauches. This elegant diverſion was introduced, encouraged, and promoted by a crew of rapacious ſharpers, who had made themſelves neceſſary companions to this hopeful generation, by the talents of pimping and buffoonery: and though they were univerſally known, even by thoſe they preyed upon, to have no other means of earning their livelihood, than the moſt infamous and fraudulent practices, they were careſſed and courted by theſe infatuated dupes, when a man of honour, who would not join in their exceſſes, would have been treated with the utmoſt indignity and contempt.

Though

Though Peregrine, in his heart, deteſted thoſe abandoned courſes, and was a profeſſed enemy to the whole ſociety of gameſters, whom he conſidered, and always treated as the foes of human kind, he was inſenſibly accuſtomed to licentious riot, and even led imperceptibly into play by thoſe cormorants, who are no leſs dangerous in the art of cheating, than by their conſummate ſkill in working upon the paſſions of unwary youth. They are, for the moſt part, naturally cool, phlegmatic and crafty, and by a long habit of diſſimulation, have gained an abſolute dominion over the haſty paſſions of the heart; ſo that they engage with manifeſt advantage over the impatience and impetuoſity of a warm, undeſigning temper, like that of our young gentleman, who, when he was heated with wine, miſled by example, invited on one hand, and defied on the other, forgot all his maxims of caution and ſobriety, and plunging into the reigning folly of the place, had frequent occaſions to moralize in the morning, upon the loſs of the preceding night.

Theſe penitential reflections were attended with many laudable reſolutions of profiting by the expence which he had ſo dearly purchaſed; but he was one of thoſe philoſophers, who always put off, till another day, the commencement of their reformation.

The end of the THIRD VOLUME.

MVSEVM
BRITAN
NICVM